# ระบบเป็นคาบแบบอิมพัลส์ในมิติอนันต์ 

## นางสาวสุิิตรา หินแปง

วิทยานิพนธ์นี้เป็นส่วนหนึ่งของการศึกษาตามหลักสูตรปริญญาวิทยาศาสตรดุษฎีบัณฑิต สาขาวิชาคณิตศาสตร์ประยุกต์ มหาวิทยาลัยเทคโนโลยีสุรนารี

# INFINITE DIMENSIONAL PERIODIC SYSTEMS WITH IMPULSES 

## Sujitra Hinpang

A Thesis Submitted in Partial Fulfillment of the Requirements for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy in Applied Mathematics Suranaree University of Technology

Academic Year 2006

# INFINITE DIMENSIONAL PERIODIC SYSTEMS WITH IMPULSES 

Suranaree University of Technology has approved this thesis submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy. Thesis Examining Committee
(Assoc. Prof. Dr. Prapasri Asawakun)
Chairperson
(Assoc. Prof. Dr. Pairote Sattayatham)
Member (Thesis Advisor)
(Prof. Aumnuay Kananthai )
Member
(Assoc. Prof. Dr. Suthep Suantai )
Member
(Asst. Prof. Dr. Arjuna Chaiyasena)
Member
(Assoc. Prof. Dr. Saowanee Rattanaphani) (Assoc. Prof. Dr. Sompong Thammathaworn)
Vice Rector for Academic Affairs Dean of Institute of Science

สุจิตรา หินแปง : ระบบเป็นคาบแบบอิมพัลส์ในมิติอนันต์ (INFINITE DIMENSIONAL PERIODIC SYSTEMS WITH IMPULSES) อาจารย์ที่ปรึกษา : รองศาสตราจารย์ ดร. ไพโรจน์ สัตยธรรม, 133 หน้า

วิทยานิพนธ์คบับนี้ศึกษาการมีผลเฉลยชนิดอ่อนอย่างเป็นคาบของระบบเป็นคาบแบบอิม พัลส์เชิงเส้นและกึ่งเชิงเส้นในมิติอนันต์ โดยมีตัวคำเนินการกณิกนันต์เป็นแบบ $\mathrm{C}_{0}$ - กึ่งกลุ่ม

ในตอนแรกจะเริ่มต้นด้วยการพิสูงน์เรื่องการมีจริงของผลเฉลยชนิดอ่อนอย่างเป็นคาบของ ระบบเป็นคาบแบบอิมพัลส์เชิงเส้น เราได้แก้ปัญูหาด้วยการใช้ทฤษฎีแบบกึ่งกลุ่มและทฤษฎีบทจุด คงที่

โดยการใช้วิธีการเดียวกับข้างต้น เราได้พิสูจน์การมีจริงของผลเฉลยชนิดอ่อนอย่างเป็น คาบของระบบเป็นคาบแบบอิมพัสส์กึ่งเชิงเส้นด้วย

ในท้ายสุดได้มีการเสนอตัวอย่างซึ่งเกี่ยวข้องกับสมการเชิงอนุพันธ์ย่อยกึ่งกลุ่มชนิดพารา โบลิกแบบอิมพัลส์

สาขาวิชาคณิตศาสตร์
ปีการศึกษา 2549

ลายมือชื่อนักศึกษา
ลายมือชื่ออาจารย์ที่ปรึกษา $\qquad$

## IMPULSIVE SYSTEMS / PERIODIC SOLUTION / SEMIGROUP / BANACH SPACE

This thesis systematically studies periodic mild solutions for linear and semilinear impulsive control systems on infinite dimensional space in those cases where the differential operator involved is the infinitesimal generator of $C_{0^{-}}$ semigroup.

First, a new existence result on periodic mild solutions for linear impulsive control systems is presented. An approach involving integrating the theory of semigroup and the fixed point theorem was used. This approach also yields an existence result of periodic mild solutions for the semilinear impulsive control systems.

Finally, the results are illustrated by example concerning semilinear partial differential equations of parabolic type with impulses.
$\qquad$
$\qquad$

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I am profoundly grateful to Assoc. Prof. Dr. Pairote Sattayatham and Prof. Dr. Xiang Xioaling. Without their long-term guidance, encouragement, support and patient help, this thesis could not have been carried out.

I would like to acknowledge the personal and professional support received from the faculty of the School of Mathematics, Suranaree University of Technology : Assoc. Prof. Dr. Prapasri Assawakun, Asst. Prof. Dr. Arjuna Chaiyasena, Asst. Prof. Dr. Eckart Schulz, Prof. Dr. Sergey Meleshko and Assoc. Prof. Dr. Nikolay Moshkin.

I also want to express my appreciation to Prof. Aumnuay Kananthai and Assoc. Prof. Dr. Suthep Suantai for their valuable discussions and comments.

I would like to express my appreciation to the following for their sincere help. I wish to thank Dr. Jessada Tantanuch for the SUT-thesis format in Latex. I would like to thank all my friends who always have given their friendly help.

I acknowledge the financial support of the Ministry of University Affairs of Thailand (MUA). I am indebted to Khonkaen University for grants to support my studies throughout.

Last but not least, I am deeply grateful to my parents, my brother and my sister, for support, understanding, encouragement and love.

## CONTENTS

Page
ABSTRACT IN THAI ..... I
ABSTRACT IN ENGLISH ..... II
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS ..... III
CONTENTS ..... IV
CHAPTER
I INTRODUCTION ..... 1
II MATHEMATICAL PRELIMINARIES ..... 4
2.1 Elements of Functional Analysis ..... 4
2.1.1 Normed Linear Spaces ..... 4
2.1.2 Linear Operators ..... 5
2.1.3 Linear Functionals and Dual Spaces ..... 7
2.1.4 Closed Operators ..... 7
2.1.5 Compact Linear Operators ..... 8
2.1.6 Spectral Properties of Compact Linear Operators ..... 11
2.1.7 Operator Equations Involving Compact Linear Operators ..... 12
2.1.8 Fredholm Alternative ..... 14
2.2 Integration Theory ..... 15
2.2.1 Measurable Functions ..... 15
2.2.2 Bochner Integral ..... 16
2.2.3 Fréchet Derivative ..... 17

## CONTENTS (Continued)

Page
2.3 Theory of $C_{0}$-semigroup ..... 18
2.3.1 $C_{0}$-semigroups ..... 18
2.3.2 Semigroup of Compact Operators ..... 20
2.3.3 Differentiable and Analytic Semigroups ..... 21
2.4 Differential Equations on Banach Spaces ..... 22
2.4.1 The Homogeneous Initial Value Problem ..... 23
2.4.2 The Inhomogeneous Initial Value Problem ..... 24
2.4.3 Semilinear Initial Value Problem and Perturbations Theory. ..... 26
2.5 Gronwall's Lemma ..... 29
III LINEAR PERIODIC SYSTEMS WITH IMPULSES ..... 30
3.1 Notations ..... 30
3.2 Homogenous Linear Impulsive Periodic Systems ..... 31
3.2.1 Impulsive Evolution Operator ..... 31
3.2.2 Definitions of Solutions ..... 34
3.2.3 Regularity of Mild Solutions ..... 43
3.2.4 Existence and Uniqueness of periodic mild solutions ..... 44
3.3 Nonhomogeneous Linear Impulsive Periodic Control Systems ..... 46
3.3.1 Definitions of Solutions ..... 46
3.3.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions ..... 47
3.4 Linear Impulsive Periodic Control Systems with Parameter Pertur- bations ..... 56
3.4.1 Definitions of Solutions ..... 57
3.4.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions ..... 58

## CONTENTS (Continued)

Page
IV SEMILINEAR PERIODIC SYSTEMS WITH IMPULSES ..... 69
4.1 Semiliner Impulsive Periodic Systems ..... 69
4.1.1 Definitions of Solutions ..... 70
4.1.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions ..... 70
4.2 Semilinear Impulsive Periodic Control Systems ..... 79
4.2.1 Definitions of Solutions ..... 79
4.2.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions ..... 80
4.3 Semilinear Impulsive Periodic Control Systems With Parameter Perturbations ..... 85
4.3.1 Definitions of Solutions ..... 86
4.3.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions ..... 87
V APPLICATIONS ..... 91
5.1 Terminology ..... 91
5.2 Example ..... 94
VI CONCLUSIONS ..... 97
6.1 Thesis Summary ..... 97
6.1.1 Problems ..... 97
6.1.2 Assumptions ..... 99
6.1.3 Results ..... 101
6.1.4 Applications ..... 105
6.1.5 Suggestion for Further Work ..... 105

## CONTENTS (Continued)

Page
APPENDICES
APPENDIX A PUBLICATION ..... 111
A. 1 Introduction ..... 111
A. 2 Impulsive Evolution Operator and Homoge- neous Linear Impulsive Periodic System ..... 112
A. 3 Nonhomogeneous Linear Impulsive Periodic Control System ..... 116
A. 4 Impulsive Periodic Control System with Param- eter Perturbations ..... 126
A. 5 References ..... 132
CURRICULUM VITAE ..... 133

## CHAPTER I

## INTRODUCTION

Recently, differential equations with impulsive conditions have been studied quite extensively, where the traditional initial value problems

$$
x(0)=x_{0},
$$

are replaced by the impulsive conditions

$$
x(0)=x_{0}, \quad \Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=B_{k} x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \quad k=1,2, \ldots
$$

where $0<\tau_{1}<\tau_{2}<\ldots, \quad \Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right), \quad k=1,2, \ldots$, and $B_{k}^{\prime} s$ are some operators.

That is, the impulsive conditions are the combinations of traditional initial value problems and short-term perturbations, the durations of which are negligible in comparison with the duration of the whole process. The Impulsive differential equations appear to represent a natural framework for mathematical modelings of several real world phenomena. For instance, systems with impulses effects have application in physics, in biotechnology, in industrial robotics, in pharmacokinetics, in population dynamics, in optimal control and so on. The qualitative investigation of impulsive differential equations began with the work of Mil'man and Myshkis (1960). The possibility of broad practical applications of impulsive differential equations in recent years and the publication of monographs about this subject is explored in Samoilenko and Perestyuk (1987), Lakshmikantham, Bainove and Simeonov (1989) and Bainove and Simeonove (1989). For the basic theory on impulsive differential equations, the reader is referred to Lakshmikantham (1989).

In the recent past, attention has been given to impulsive differential equations with results concerning the existence of periodic solutions for first-order impulsive differential equations appearing. See, for instance, the papers by Hristova and Bainov (1987), Nieto (1997) and Benchohra, Henderson and Ntouyas (2001). The fundamental tools used in the existence proofs of all the above mentioned works are essentially fixed point arguments, nonlinear alternative, topological transversality, degree theory or the monotone method combined with upper and lower solutions.

On the other hand, another important and interesting problem concerns the impulsive periodic systems arising naturally in the mathematical modeling of various physical processes. Since many processes are cyclic, for example, chemotherapeutic treatments in Lakmeche and Arino (2000), vaccinations against disease in Shulgin, Stone and Agur (1998) and inputs of substrates in Liu and Zhang (2005). An important trend in the investigation of impulsive differential equation is related to the periodic solution for the systems. Related basic theory on this aspect can be found in Bainove and Simeonov (1993), Yang (2001) and the references cited therein.

Although, there are some papers discussing the existence of periodic solutions on finite dimensional space, linear and semilinear periodic systems with impulses on infinite dimensional space have not been studied.

In this thesis, we systematically study the existence and uniqueness of periodic mild solutions for linear and semilinear periodic systems with impulses on infinite dimensional space, where the differential operator involved is the infinitesimal generator of $C_{0}$-semigroup by using semigroup theory and fixed point theorems.

The thesis is organized as follows. Chapter II presents some basic concepts and results from functional analysis, semigroup theory and evolution equations that are necessary for the presentation of the theory in later chapters. Chapter III deals with the existence of periodic mild solutions for linear periodic systems with impulses. In chapter IV, we study the existence of periodic mild solutions for semilinear periodic systems with impulses. In chapter V, we present two examples to demonstrate the applicability of our abstract results.

## CHAPTER II

## MATHEMATICAL PRELIMINARIES

In this chapter, we review the theoretical background from functional analysis, real analysis and semigroup theory which will be used throughout this thesis. Results are mostly without proof which can be found in standard textbooks (see Ahmed (1991), Erwin Kreyszig (1978) and Pazy (1983) for example).

### 2.1 Elements of Functional Analysis

### 2.1.1 Normed Linear Spaces

Definition 2.1.1. Let $X$ be a vector space over field $\mathbb{F}$, (where $\mathbb{F}=\mathbb{R}$ or $\mathbb{C}$ ).
A function $\|\cdot\|: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is said to be a norm on $X$ if it satisfies :
(N1) $\|x\| \geq 0$,
(N2) $\|x\|=0 \Leftrightarrow x=0$,
(N3) $\quad\|\alpha x\|=|\alpha|\|x\|$,
(N4) $\|x+y\| \leq\|x\|+\|y\|$,
for all $x, y \in X$ and $\alpha \in \mathbb{F}$.

Definition 2.1.2. Let $X$ be a vector space over field $\mathbb{F}$, (where $\mathbb{F}=\mathbb{R}$ or $\mathbb{C}$ ).
A function $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle: X \times X \rightarrow \mathbb{F}$ is said to be an inner product on $X$ if it satisfies :
(IP1) $\langle x, x\rangle \geq 0$,
(IP2) $\langle x, x\rangle=0 \Leftrightarrow x=0$,
(IP3) $\langle x, y\rangle=\overline{\langle y, x\rangle}$,
(IP4) $\langle\alpha x+\beta y, z\rangle=\alpha\langle x, z\rangle+\beta\langle y, z\rangle$,
for all $x, y, z \in X$ and $\alpha, \beta \in \mathbb{F}$. In (IP3), the bar denotes the complex conjugate. Consequently, if $X$ is a real vector space, we simply have $\langle x, y\rangle=\langle y, x\rangle$.

Hereafter, we denote a norm on $X$ by $\|\cdot\|_{X}$. Similarly, we denote an inner product on $X$ by $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{X}$. If $X$ has a norm, then the pair $\left(X,\|\cdot\|_{X}\right)$ is called a normed linear space. The norm $\|\cdot\|_{X}$ induces a metric $d$ on $X$ by $d(x, y)=\|x-y\|_{X}$ and thus $X$ become a topological space.

Definition 2.1.3. A sequence $\left\{x_{n}\right\}$ in a normed space $(X,\|\cdot\|)$ is said to be a Cauchy sequence if for every $\varepsilon>0$ there exists $N=N(\varepsilon)>0$ such that

$$
\left\|x_{m}-x_{n}\right\|<\varepsilon, \quad \text { for all } m, n>N .
$$

Definition 2.1.4. A normed linear space $X$ is said to be complete if every Cauchy sequence in $X$ converges (that is, has a limit which is an element of $X$ ).

Definition 2.1.5. A normed linear space $X$ is said to be a Banach space if it is complete.

Definition 2.1.6. A Banach space $X$ is uniformly convex, if whenever $\left\{x_{n}\right\},\left\{y_{n}\right\} \in \overline{B_{1}(0)}$ and $\left\|x_{n}+y_{n}\right\| \rightarrow 2$, as $n \rightarrow \infty$, then $\left\|x_{n}-y_{n}\right\| \rightarrow 0$.

Definition 2.1.7. Let $X$ be a linear space with inner product $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{X}$. The inner product induces a norm on $X$ by $\|\cdot\|_{X}=\sqrt{\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{X}}$. Then $X$ is said to be a Hilbert space if it is complete under the norm $\|\cdot\|_{X}$.

### 2.1.2 Linear Operators

Definition 2.1.8. Let $X$ and $Y$ be vector spaces. A linear operator or a linear map $T$ from $X$ into $Y$ is a function $T: X \rightarrow Y$ such that
(i) $T(x+y)=T(x)+T(y)$ for all $x, y \in X$,
(ii) $T(\alpha x)=\alpha T(x)$ for all $x \in X$ and $\alpha \in \mathbb{F}$.

Definition 2.1.9. Let $X$ and $Y$ be normed linear spaces and $T: X \rightarrow Y$ a linear operator. Then $T$ is said to be bounded if there exists $M>0$ such that

$$
\|T x\|_{Y} \leq M\|x\|_{X} \quad \text { for all } x \in X
$$

Theorem 2.1.1. Let $X$ and $Y$ be normed linear spaces and $T: X \rightarrow Y$ a linear operator. Then the following statement are equivalent :
(i) $T$ is continuous at 0 , the zero vector in $X$,
(ii) $T$ is continuous on $X$,
(iii) $T$ is bounded on $X$.

Let $X$ and $Y$ be normed spaces. Consider the set $\mathcal{L}(X, Y)$ consisting of all bounded linear operator from $X$ to $Y . \mathcal{L}(X, Y)$ becomes a normed linear space if we define vector operations in a natural way and define the operator norm $\|T\|_{\mathcal{L}(X, Y)}=\sup _{\|x\|_{X} \leq 1}\|T x\|_{Y}$. If $X=Y$, we simply write $\mathcal{L}(X)$. Moreover, we have the following theorem

Theorem 2.1.2. If $X$ is a normed linear space and $Y$ is a Banach space, then $\mathcal{L}(X, Y)$ is a Banach space.

Lemma 2.1.3. If $T: X \rightarrow Y$ and $S: Y \rightarrow Z$ are bounded linear operators, then $S T: X \rightarrow Z$ is also a bounded linear operator. Moreover,

$$
\|S T\| \leq\|S\|\|T\|
$$

Theorem 2.1.4. (Uniform Boundedness Principle). Let $X$ and $Y$ be Banach spaces and $\mathcal{T} \subset \mathcal{L}(X, Y)$. Then,

$$
\sup _{T \in \mathcal{T}}\|T x\|_{Y}<\infty, \quad \forall x \in X \quad \text { implies that } \quad \sup _{T \in \mathcal{T}}\|T\|_{\mathcal{L}(X, Y)}<\infty .
$$

### 2.1.3 Linear Functionals and Dual Spaces

Definition 2.1.10. A linear functional on a normed linear space $X$ is a linear map from $X$ into the scalar field $\mathbb{F}$.

We write $X^{*}$ for the space of all bounded linear functionals on $X$ and call it the dual space of $X$ and $\langle x, y\rangle$ to denote the pairing of an element $x \in X^{*}$ with an element $y \in X$.

Definition 2.1.11. A Banach space is reflexive if $\left(X^{*}\right)^{*}=X$. More precisely, this means that for each $x^{* *} \in\left(X^{*}\right)^{*}$, there exists $x \in X$ such that

$$
\left\langle x^{* *}, x^{*}\right\rangle=\left\langle x^{*}, x\right\rangle \quad \text { for all } x^{*} \in X^{*} .
$$

### 2.1.4 Closed Operators

Definition 2.1.12. Let $X$ and $Y$ be normed linear spaces and $T: X \rightarrow Y$ a function. The graph of $T$, denote by $\mathcal{G}(T)$, is defined by

$$
\mathcal{G}(T)=\{(x, T x) \mid x \in X\} \subset X \times Y .
$$

If $T$ is linear, it is easy to verify that $\mathcal{G}(T)$ is a linear subspace of $X \times Y$. We say that the map $T: X \rightarrow Y$ has a closed graph or $T$ is a closed operator if $\mathcal{G}(T)$ is a closed subspace of $X \times Y$.

The following lemma gives a characterization of the closedness of a linear operator in terms of sequences.

Lemma 2.1.5. Let $X$ and $Y$ be normed linear spaces and $T: X \rightarrow Y$ a linear operator. Then $T$ has a closed graph if and only if for every sequence $\left\{x_{n}\right\}$ in $X$, if $x_{n} \rightarrow x$ and $T x_{n} \rightarrow y$, then $y=T x$.

Theorem 2.1.6. (Closed Graph Theorem). Suppose that $X$ and $Y$ are Banach spaces and $T: X \rightarrow Y$ a linear operator. Then $T$ is bounded if and only if $T$ has a closed graph.

Definition 2.1.13. Let $X$ be a Banach space, $Y$ a subspace(not necessarily closed) of $X$ and let $A: D(A) \subset X \rightarrow X$ be a linear operator in $X$. The subspace $Y$ of $X$ is an invariant subspace of $A$ if $A: D(A) \cap Y \rightarrow Y$.

### 2.1.5 Compact Linear Operators

First, we recall the following facts from topology.

Definition 2.1.14. A subset $M$ of a topological space $X$ is compact if every open cover of $M$ contains a finite subcover.

Definition 2.1.15. Let $X$ and $Y$ be normed spaces. An operator $A: X \rightarrow Y$ is called a compact linear operator ( or completely continuous linear operator) if $A$ is linear and if for every bounded subset $M$ of $X$, the image $A(M)$ is relatively compact, that is, the closure $\overline{A(M)}$ is compact.

Definition 2.1.16. ( $\varepsilon$-net, total boundedness). Let $B$ be a subset of a metric space $X$ and $\varepsilon>0$ be given. A set $M_{\varepsilon} \subset X$ is called an $\varepsilon$-net for $B$ if for every point $z \in B$ there is a point of $M_{\varepsilon}$ at a distance from $z$ less than $\varepsilon$. The set $B$ is said to be totally bounded if for every $\varepsilon>0$ there is a finite $\varepsilon-$ net $M_{\varepsilon} \subset X$ for $B$, where "finite" means that $M_{\varepsilon}$ is a finite set (that is, consists of finitely many points).

Lemma 2.1.7. Let $B$ be a subset of a metric space $X$.

1. If $B$ is relatively compact, then $B$ is totally bounded.
2. If $B$ is totally bounded and $X$ is complete, then $B$ is relatively compact.
3. If $B$ is totally bounded, then for every $\varepsilon>0$ it has a finite $\varepsilon-$ net $M_{\varepsilon} \subset B$. Theorem 2.1.8. Let $T: X \rightarrow X$ be a compact linear operator and $S: X \rightarrow X a$ bounded linear operator on a normed space $X$. Then TS and ST are compact.

The following fixed point theorems are the main tools in the proof of the existence of periodic mild solutions for linear and semilinear periodic systems with impulses.

Definition 2.1.17. Let $X$ be a Banach space and let $A: X \rightarrow X$ be an operator (not necessarily linear). A fixed point of $A$ is a point $x \in X$ such that

$$
A x=x .
$$

In other words, a fixed point of $A$ is solution of the equation

$$
A x=x, x \in X
$$

Definition 2.1.18. Let $X$ be a Banach space and let $A: X \rightarrow X$ be an operator. The operator $A$ is called Lipschitz continuous (or, briefly, $A$ is Lipschitz) if

$$
\|A x-A y\| \leq L\|x-y\|
$$

for some constant $L$ and all $x, y \in X$. If $0 \leq L<1$ is called a contraction.

Theorem 2.1.9. (The Contraction Mapping Theorem). Let $X$ be a Banach space and let $A: X \rightarrow X$ be a contraction. Then the equation

$$
A x=x
$$

has a unique solution in $X$, i.e., $A$ has a unique fixed point $x$. Further, this fixed point may be obtained by the method of successive approximations as follow:

$$
x_{0} \in X \text { arbitrary, } x_{n}=A x_{n-1}(n \geq 1) ; x=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} x_{n} .
$$

Corollary 2.1.10. Let $X_{0}$ be a closed subset of the Banach space $X$ and assume that $A$ maps $X_{0}$ into itself and is a contraction on $X_{0}$. The equation $A x=x$ has $a$ unique solution $x \in X_{0}$.

Theorem 2.1.11. (Schauder Fixed Point Theorem). Let $G$ be a compact convex set in a Banach space $B$ and let $T$ be a continuous mapping of $G$ into itself. Then $T$ has a fixed point.

Corollary 2.1.12. Let $G$ be a compact convex set in a Banach space $B$ and let $T$ be a continuous mapping of $G$ into itself such that the image $T G$ is relatively compact. Then $T$ has a fixed point.

Theorem 2.1.13. (Leray-Schauder Fixed Point Theorem). Let $G$ be a compact mapping of a Banach space $B$ into itself and suppose there exists a constant $M$ such that

$$
\|x\|_{B}<M
$$

for all $x \in B$ and $\lambda \in[0,1]$ satisfying $x=\lambda G x$. Then $G$ has a fixed point.

The proof can be found in Gilbarg and Trudinger (1977).

Theorem 2.1.14. (Arzela-Ascoli). Let $X$ and $Y$ be Banach spaces, $G \subset X$ be compact and $\mathcal{F} \subset C(G, Y)$. Suppose that

1. for each $x \in G$, the set $\{F(x) \mid F \in \mathcal{F}\}$ is relatively compact in $Y$.
2. $\mathcal{F}$ is uniformly bounded, i.e.,

$$
\sup _{F \in \mathcal{F}, x \in G}\|F(x)\|_{Y}<\infty .
$$

3. $\mathcal{F}$ is equicontinuous, i.e., for any $\varepsilon>0$, there exists $\delta=\delta(\varepsilon)>0$ such that

$$
\|F(x)-F(y)\|_{Y}<\varepsilon, \text { when ever }\|x-y\|_{X}<\delta, F \in \mathcal{F}, x, y \in G .
$$

Then there exists a sequence $\left\{F_{k}\right\} \subseteq \mathcal{F}$ and $F_{0} \in C(G, Y)$ such that

$$
\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left\|F_{k}-F_{0}\right\|_{C(G, Y)}=0
$$

where $C(G, Y)$ denotes the supremum norm

The proof can be found in Xunjing Li and Jiongmin Yong (1995).

### 2.1.6 Spectral Properties of Compact Linear Operators

In this section, we consider spectral properties of a compact linear operator $T: X \rightarrow X$ on a normed space $X$. For this purpose we use the operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{\lambda}=T-\lambda I \quad(\lambda \in \mathbb{C}) \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $I$ is the identity operator on $X$.

Definition 2.1.19. Let $X$ be a complex Banach space and let $T: D(T) \subset X \rightarrow X$ be a linear, not necessarily bounded operator. The resolvent set $\rho(T)$ of $T$ is the set of all complex numbers $\lambda$ for which $T-\lambda I$ is invertible, i.e., $(T-\lambda I)^{-1}$ is a bounded linear operator in $X$, that is, the resolvent set $\rho(T)$ of $T$ is given by

$$
\rho(T)=\left\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}:(T-\lambda I)^{-1} \in \mathcal{L}(X)\right\},
$$

$I$ is the identity operator on $X$. When $\lambda \in \rho(T), R(\lambda, T)=(T-\lambda I)^{-1}$ is called the resolvent operator of $T$ at $\lambda$.

Definition 2.1.20. An eigenvalue of an operator $T$ is a complex number $\lambda$ such that

$$
T x=\lambda x
$$

has a solution $x \neq 0$. This $x$ is called an eigenvector of $T$ corresponding to that eigenvalue $\lambda$.

Theorem 2.1.15. The set of eigenvalues of a compact linear operator $T: X \rightarrow X$ on a normed space $X$ is countable (perhaps finite or even empty) and the only possible point of accumulation is $\lambda=0$.

Theorem 2.1.16. Let $T: X \rightarrow X$ be a compact linear operator on a normed space $X$. Then for every $\lambda \neq 0$ the null space $\mathcal{N}\left(T_{\lambda}\right)$ of $T_{\lambda}=T-\lambda I$ is finite dimensional.

Theorem 2.1.17. Let $T: X \rightarrow X$ be a compact linear operator on a normed space $X$. Then for every $\lambda \neq 0$ the range of $T_{\lambda}=T-\lambda I$ is closed.

### 2.1.7 Operator Equations Involving Compact Linear Operators

I. Fredholm (1903) investigated linear integral equations and his famous work suggested a theory of solvability of certain equations involving a compact linear operator. We will consider a compact linear operator $T: X \rightarrow X$ on a normed space $X$, the adjoint operator $T^{*}: X^{*} \rightarrow X^{*}$, the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
T x-\lambda x=y \quad(y \in X) \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

the corresponding homogeneous equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
T x-\lambda x=0, \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and two similar equations involving the adjoint operator, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
T^{*} f-\lambda f=g \quad\left(g \in X^{*}\right) \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

the corresponding homogeneous equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
T^{*} f-\lambda f=0, \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all nonzero $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$. We will study the existence of solutions $x$ and $f$, respectively.

Theorem 2.1.18. Let $T: X \rightarrow X$ be a compact linear operator on a normed space $X$ and let $\lambda \neq 0$. Then (2.2) has a solution $x$ if and only if $y$ is such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(y)=0 \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $f \in X^{*}$ satisfying (2.5).

Hence if (2.5) has only the trivial solution $f=0$, then (2.2) with any $y \in X$ is solvable.

Theorem 2.1.19. Let $T: X \rightarrow X$ be a compact linear operator on a normed space $X$ and let $\lambda \neq 0$. Then (2.4) has a solution $f$ if and only if $g$ is such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
g(x)=0 \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $x \in X$ satisfying (A.2).

Hence if (A.2) has only the trivial solution $x=0$, then (2.4) with any given $y \in X$ is solvable.

Theorem 2.1.20. Let $T: X \rightarrow X$ be a compact linear operator on a normed space $X$ and let $\lambda \neq 0$. Then :
(a) Equation (2.2) has a solution $x$ for every $y \in X$ if and only if the homogeneous equation (A.2) has only the trivial solution $x=0$. In this case the solution of (2.2) is unique and $T_{\lambda}$ has a bounded inverse.
(b) Equation (2.4) has a solution $f$ for every $g \in X^{*}$ if and only if (2.5) has only the trivial solution $f=0$. In this case the solution of (2.4) is unique.

Theorem 2.1.21. Let $T: X \rightarrow X$ be a compact linear operator on a normed space $X$ and let $\lambda \neq 0$. Then (A.2) and (2.5) have the same number of linearly independent solutions.

### 2.1.8 Fredholm Alternative

Definition 2.1.21. A bounded linear operator $A: X \rightarrow X$ on a normed space $X$ is said to satisfy the Fredholm alternative if $A$ is such either one of the following holds :
(I) The nonhomogeneous equations

$$
A x=y, \quad A^{*} f=g
$$

$\left(A^{*}: X^{*} \rightarrow X^{*}\right.$ being the adjoint operator of $A$ ) have solutions $x$ and $f$, respectively, for every given $y \in X$ and $g \in X^{*}$, the solutions being unique. The corresponding homogeneous equations

$$
A x=0, \quad A^{*} f=0
$$

have only the trivial solution $x=0$ and $f=0$, respectively.
(II) The homogeneous equations

$$
A x=0, \quad A^{*} f=0
$$

have the same number of linearly independent solutions

$$
x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n} \quad \text { and } \quad f_{1}, \ldots, f_{n}
$$

respectively. The nonhomogeneous equations

$$
A x=y, \quad A^{*} f=g
$$

are not solvable for all $y$ and $g$, respectively ; they have a solution if and only if $y$ and $g$ are such that

$$
f_{k}(y)=0, \quad g\left(x_{k}\right)=0
$$

$(k=1, \ldots, n)$, respectively.
Theorem 2.1.22. Let $T: X \rightarrow X$ be a compact linear operator on a normed space $X$ and let $\lambda \neq 0$. Then $T_{\lambda}=T-\lambda I$ satisfies the Fredholm alternative.

### 2.2 Integration Theory

In this section, we review some basic concept of measurable functions and Bochner integral for Banach space valued functions. We then state some standard convergence theorems for integrals and introduce the definition of Fréchet derivative. For details and proofs we refer to Zeidler (1990), unless we state otherwise.

### 2.2.1 Measurable Functions

Let $M \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be a measurable set and $X$ a Banach space.

Definition 2.2.1. 1. A function $f: M \rightarrow X$ is called a step function if there exist finitely many pairwise disjoint measurable subsets $M_{i}$ of $M$ such that $\left|M_{i}\right|<\infty$ for all $i$ and element $a_{i}$ of $X$ such that

$$
f(x)= \begin{cases}a_{i}, & \text { if } \quad x \in M_{i} \\ 0, & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

That is, $f$ is constant on each set $M_{i}$.
2. The integral of a step function is defined to be

$$
\int_{M} f d x=\sum_{i}\left|M_{i}\right| a_{i} .
$$

3. A function $f: M \rightarrow X$ is called (strongly) measurable if there exists a sequence $\left\{f_{n}\right\}$ of step functions $f_{n}: M \rightarrow X$ such that

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} f_{n}(x)=f(x) \quad \text { for almost all } \quad x \in M .
$$

4. (Measurable functions via substitution). Let $X, U$ be real and separable Banach spaces, $M \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be measurable, $f: M \times U \rightarrow X$ and $u: M \rightarrow U$. Set

$$
F(x)=f(x, u(x)) .
$$

If the function $u: M \rightarrow U$ is measurable, then the function $F: M \rightarrow X$ is also measurable provided that $f$ satisfies the Caratheodory condition :
(i) $x \mapsto f(x, u)$ is measurable on $M$ for all $u \in U$.
(ii) $u \mapsto f(x, u)$ is continuous on $U$ for almost all $x \in M$.

### 2.2.2 Bochner Integral

Definition 2.2.2. A function $f: \Omega \rightarrow X$ is called simple if there exist $x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n} \in X$ and $E_{1}, E_{2}, \ldots, E_{n} \in \mathcal{M}$ such that

$$
f(x)=\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_{i} \chi_{E_{i}}(x)
$$

where $\chi_{E_{i}}$ is the characteristic function of a measurable set $E_{i}$ and the set $E_{i}$ are pairwise disjoint with union $\Omega$.

Definition 2.2.3. A function $f: \Omega \rightarrow X$ is called Bochner integrable if $\Omega$ is measurable and there exists a sequence $\left\{f_{n}\right\}$ of simple functions $f_{n}: \Omega \rightarrow X$ such that

1. $f(x)=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} f_{n}(x)$ for almost all $x \in \Omega$,
2. given $\varepsilon>0$, there exists $n_{0}=n_{0}(\varepsilon) \in \mathbb{N}$ such that

$$
\int_{\Omega}\left\|f_{m}(x)-f_{n}(x)\right\|_{X} d x<\varepsilon \quad \text { for all } \quad m, n \geq n_{0}(\varepsilon)
$$

The second condition implies that the sequence $\left\{\int_{M} f_{n}(x) d x\right\}$ is Cauchy in $X$, so that we can define the Lebesgue integral of $f$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M} f(x) d x=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_{M} f_{n}(x) d x \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

One can show that this integral is well defined, i.e., the limit in (2.8) does not depend on the choice of the step functions $f_{n}$. Furthermore if $B \in \mathcal{L}(X)$ and the
integral of $f$ exists, then the integral of $B f$ exists and

$$
\int_{M} B f(x) d x=B \int_{M} f(x) d x
$$

Theorem 2.2.1. A strongly measurable function $f: \Omega \rightarrow X$ is Bochner integrable if and only if $\int_{\Omega}\|f(x)\| d x<\infty$.

Theorem 2.2.2. (Majorant criterion). Let $f: \Omega \rightarrow X$ be measurable. If there exists $g: \Omega \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ such that $\|f(x)\|_{X} \leq g(x)$ for almost all $x \in \Omega$ and $\int_{\Omega} g(x) d x$ exists, then $f$ is integrable and

$$
\left\|\int_{\Omega} f(x) d x\right\|_{X} \leq \int_{\Omega}\|f(x)\|_{X} d x \leq \int_{\Omega} g(x) d x .
$$

### 2.2.3 Fréchet Derivative

Definition 2.2.4. A function $f$ defined on an open subset $D$ of a normed space $X$ with values in a normed space $Y$ is Fréchet differentiable at $x \in D$ if there exists a bounded linear operator $\partial f(x) \in \mathcal{L}(X, Y)$ such that if

$$
\rho(x, h):=f(x+h)-f(x)-\partial f(x) h, \quad(x, x+h \in D),
$$

then

$$
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} \frac{\|\rho(x, h)\|_{X}}{\|h\|_{Y}}=0 .
$$

The operator $\partial f(x)$ is called the Fréchet differential or Fréchet derivative of $f$ at $x$. Obviously, Fréchet differentiability implies continuity. The mean value theorem holds for Fréchet differentiable maps: we need it in the form

$$
\|f(x)-f(y)\| \leq\|x-y\|_{X} \sup _{z \in I}\|\partial f(z)\|_{(X, Y)}
$$

( $I$ the segment joining $x$ and $y$ ) valid for $D$ convex. The Fréchet differentiable is of course the calculus differential if $X=\mathbb{R}^{m}$.

### 2.3 Theory of $C_{0}$-semigroup

In this section, we recall some basic concepts and results on $C_{0}$-semigroups. For more details and proofs, we refer to Ahmed (1991) and Pazy (1983).

### 2.3.1 $C_{0}$-semigroups

Definition 2.3.1. The family of operators $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is said to be a semigroup of bounded linear operators on $X$ if
(i) $T(0)=I,(I$ is the identity operator on $X)$.
(ii) $T(t+s)=T(t) T(s)=T(s) T(t)$ for all $t, s \geq 0$.

The semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is said to be uniformly continuous if $t \mapsto T(t)$ is continuous on $[0, \infty)$ in the uniform operator topology, that is,

$$
\lim _{t \rightarrow 0}\|T(t)-I\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}=0
$$

Equivalently, from the definition it is clear that if $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is a uniformly continuous semigroup of bounded linear operators then

$$
\lim _{t \rightarrow t_{0}}\left\|T(t)-T\left(t_{0}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}=0
$$

for all $t_{0} \in[0, \infty)$.

Definition 2.3.2. The operator $A: D(A) \subset X \rightarrow X$ defined by

$$
\begin{aligned}
D(A) & =\left\{x \in X: \lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}} A_{t} x \quad \text { exists in } X\right\} \\
A x & =\lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}} A_{t} x \text { for } x \in D(A)
\end{aligned}
$$

where for $t>0, \quad A_{t} x=\frac{T(t) x-x}{t}, x \in X$, is called the infinitesimal generator of the semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ on $X$.

Theorem 2.3.1. $A$ linear operator $A: D(A) \subset X \rightarrow X$ is the infinitesimal generator of uniformly continuous semigroup of operator $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in $X$ if and only if $A$ is a bounded linear operator.

Definition 2.3.3. ( $C_{0}$-semigroup). The semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is said to be strongly continuous at the origin if for each $x \in X$,

$$
\lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}}\|T(t) x-x\|_{X}=0
$$

That is, $t \rightarrow T(t) x$ is continuous from the right at $t=0$ for each $x \in X$.
A strongly continuous semigroup of bounded linear operator on $X$ is called a $C_{0}$-semigroup.

It readily follows from the semigroup property that strong right continuity at origin implies strong continuity for every $t>0$, we only have to note that $T(t+h) x-T(t) x=T(t)(T(h) x-x)$ for $h>0$. To obtain left continuity, we have to invoke the uniform boundedness principle.

Theorem 2.3.2. (Properties of $C_{0}$-semigroups). Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ a $C_{0}$-semigroup on $X$ with $A$ as its infinitesimal generator. Then,
(1) There exist constants $M \geq 1$ and $\omega \geq 0$ such that

$$
\|T(t)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq M e^{\omega t} \text { for all } t \geq 0
$$

(2) For each $x \in X, t \mapsto T(t) x$ is continuous $X$-valued function on $[0, \infty)$.
(3) For $x \in X$ and $t>0$,

$$
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} \frac{1}{h} \int_{t}^{t+h} T(\tau) x d \tau=T(t) x
$$

(4) For $x \in X, t \in[0, \infty), \int_{0}^{t} T(\tau) x d \tau \in D(A)$ and

$$
A\left(\int_{0}^{t} T(\tau) x d \tau\right)=T(t) x-x
$$

(5) For $x \in D(A), T(t) x \in D(A)$ and $\frac{d}{d t} T(t) x=A T(t) x=T(t) A x$.
(6) For $x \in D(A), 0 \leq s \leq t$,

$$
\int_{s}^{t} A T(\tau) x d \tau=\int_{s}^{t} T(\tau) A x d \tau=T(t) x-T(s) x
$$

(7) $\overline{D(A)}=X$ and $A$ is closed operator or equivalently to its $\operatorname{graph} \Gamma(A)=$ $\{(x, y) \in X \times X: y=A x\}$ is closed subset of $X \times X$.
(8) Let $B$ be the infinitesimal generator of $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{S(t), t \geq 0\}$. If $A=B$, then $T(t)=S(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$, that is, each $C_{0}$-semigroup generator generates a unique semigroup.

### 2.3.2 Semigroup of Compact Operators

Definition 2.3.4. A $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in a Banach space $X$ is called a compact semigroup for $t>t_{0}$ if $T(t)$ is a compact operator for every $t>t_{0}$. It is simply called compact if it is compact for all $t>0$.

Note that if $T(0)$ is compact, then $X$ must be a finite dimensional Banach space, since the identity operator is compact if and only if $X$ is finite dimensional. Hence for a general Banach space, one can expect $T(t)$ to be compact only for $t>0$. Note also that if $T\left(t_{0}\right)$ is compact for some $t_{0}>0$, then $T(t)$ is compact for all $t>t_{0}$. This follows from the fact that $T(t)=T\left(t-t_{0}\right) T\left(t_{0}\right), t_{0}>0$ and that the composition of a compact operator with a bounded operator is always compact.

Definition 2.3.5. Let $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ be a $C_{0}$-semigroup. If $T(t)$ is compact for $t>t_{0}$, then $T(t)$ is continuous in the uniform operator topology for $t>t_{0}$.

### 2.3.3 Differentiable and Analytic Semigroups

Definition 2.3.6. A $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in a Banach space $X$ is said to be differentiable if, for each $x \in X, T(t) x$ is differentiable for all $t>0$.

We have seen in Theorem 2.3.2(5) that if $T(t)$ is a $C_{0}$-semigroup with infinitesimal generator $A$ and $x \in D(A)$ then $t \mapsto T(t) x$ is differentiable for $t>0$.

Theorem 2.3.3. If $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is differentiable semigroup with $A$ as its infinitesimal generator then it is differentiable infinitely many times and for each $n=1,2,3, \ldots$
(i) $\frac{d^{n}}{d t^{n}} T(t)=T^{(n)}(t)=A^{n} T(t) \in \mathcal{L}(X)$ for all $t>0$.
(ii) $T^{(n)}(t)=\left(A T\left(\frac{t}{n}\right)\right)^{n}$ for all $t>0$.
(iii) $T^{(n)}(t)$ is uniformly continuous for all $t>0$.

Definition 2.3.7. Let $\triangle=\left\{z \in \mathbb{C}: \theta_{1}<\arg z<\theta_{2} ; \theta_{1}<0<\theta_{2}\right\}$ and suppose $T(z) \in \mathcal{L}(X)$ for all $z \in \triangle$. The family $\{T(z), z \in \triangle\}$ is called an analytic semigroup in $\triangle$ if it satisfies the following properties :
(i) $z \mapsto T(z)$ is analytic in $\triangle$, that is for each $x^{*} \in X^{*}$ and $x \in X$, the scalar valued function $z \mapsto x^{*}(T(z) x)$ is analytic in the usual sense uniformly with respect to $x^{*} \in B_{1}\left(X^{*}\right)=\left\{x^{*}:\left\|x^{*}\right\|_{X^{*}} \leq 1\right\}$ and $x \in B_{1}(X)=\left\{x:\|x\|_{X} \leq 1\right\}$,
(ii) $T(0)=I$ and $\lim _{z \rightarrow 0, z \in \triangle} T(z) x=x$ for each $x \in X$,
(iii) $T\left(z_{1}+z_{2}\right)=T\left(z_{1}\right) T\left(z_{2}\right)$ for $z_{1}, z_{2} \in \triangle$.

A complete characterization of analytic semigroups is given in the following theorem.

Theorem 2.3.4. Let $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a uniformly bounded $C_{0}{ }^{-}$ semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ with $0 \in \rho(A)$. The following statements are equivalent:
(i) $T(t)$ can be extended to an analytic semigroup from $[0, \infty)$ to a sector around it given by

$$
\triangle_{\delta}=\{z:|\arg z|<\delta\} \text { for some } \delta>0,
$$

and $\|T(z)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}$ is uniformly bounded in every closed subsector $\triangle_{\delta^{\prime}} \subset \triangle_{\delta}, \delta^{\prime}<\delta$.
(ii) There exists a constant $C>0$ such that for every $\sigma>0$ and $\tau \neq 0$

$$
\|R(\sigma+i \tau, A)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq \frac{C}{|\tau|}
$$

(iii) There exists $0<\delta<\frac{\pi}{2}$ and $M \geq 1$ such that

$$
\rho(A) \supset \Sigma=\left\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}:|\arg \lambda|<\frac{\pi}{2}+\delta\right\} \cup\{0\}
$$

and

$$
\|R(\lambda, A)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq \frac{M}{|\lambda|} \text { for all } \lambda \in \Sigma, \lambda \neq 0
$$

(iv) $T(t)$ is differentiable for $t>0$ and there exists a constant $C>0$ such that

$$
\|A T(t)\|_{X} \leq \frac{C}{t} \text { for } t>0
$$

### 2.4 Differential Equations on Banach Spaces

In this section, we introduce the concept and results on semigroups of operators via differential equations on Banach spaces which are abstract formulation of initial value problem for partial differential equations. For more details and proofs, we refer to Fattorini (1999).

### 2.4.1 The Homogeneous Initial Value Problem

Let $X$ be a Banach space and let $A: D(A) \subset X \rightarrow X$ be a given operator. Consider the differential equation on $X$ given by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t), \quad t>0  \tag{2.9}\\
x(0)=x_{0} .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Definition 2.4.1. The Cauchy problem (2.9) is said to have a classical solution if for each given $x_{0} \in D(A)$ there exists a function $x \in C([0, \infty), X)$ satisfying the following properties :
(i) $x \in C([0, \infty), X) \cap C^{1}((0, \infty), X)$,
(ii) $x(t) \in D(A)$ for all $t>0$,
(iii) (2.9) is satisfied, i.e., $\left\{\begin{array}{l}\dot{x}(t)=A x(t), t>0 \\ x(0)=x_{0} .\end{array}\right.$

Theorem 2.4.1. Let $\overline{D(A)}=X, \rho(A) \neq \emptyset$. Then (2.9) has a unique classical solution $x(t)$ which is continuously differentiable on $[0, \infty)$, for every initial value $x_{0} \in D(A)$ if and only if $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in $X$.

## Theorem 2.4.2.

(i) If $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a differentiable semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in $X$ then for every $x_{0} \in X$, (2.9) has a unique (classical) solution $x(t)=$ $T(t) x_{0}, t>0$.
(ii) If $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of an analytic semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ then for every $x_{0} \in X$, (2.9) has a unique (classical) solution $x(t)=$ $T(t) x_{0}, t>0$.

Proof. (i) Since $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is a differentiable semigroup for $t>0$, the $X$-valued function $t \mapsto T(t) x_{0}$ is differentiable for every $x_{0} \in X$ and

$$
\frac{d}{d t} T(t) x_{0}=A T(t) x_{0} \text { for } t>0
$$

Further, by Theorem 2.3.3(iii), $A T(t) x_{0}$ is Lipschitz continuous for $t>0$ and hence we conclude that $x(t)=T(t) x_{0}, t>0$, is the unique (classical) solution of (2.9).
(ii) This follows from the simple fact that for analytic semigroup, $T(t) x \in$ $D(A)$ for every $x \in X$ and $t>0$ and consequently every analytic semigroup is also a differentiable semigroup.

If $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}$-semigroup which is not differentiable then, in general, if $x \notin D(A)$, the initial value problem (2.9) dose not have a solution. The function $t \mapsto T(t) x_{0}$ is then a generalized solution of (2.9) which we will call a mild solution.

### 2.4.2 The Inhomogeneous Initial Value Problem

Consider the inhomogeneous initial value problem

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{u}(t)=A u(t)+f(t), \quad t>0  \tag{2.10}\\
u(0)=x_{0}, \quad x_{0} \in X
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in $X$ and $f \in L_{\text {loc }}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$.

Definition 2.4.2. A function $u:[0, T) \rightarrow X$ is a (classical) solution of (2.10) on $[0, T)$ if $u$ is continuous on $[0, T)$, continuously differentiable on $(0, T), u(t) \in D(A)$ for $0<t<T$ and (2.10) is satisfied on $[0, T)$.

Theorem 2.4.3 (Existence and Uniqueness). Let $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$. If $f \in L^{1}([0, T], X)$ then for every $x \in X$ the
initial value problem (2.10) has at most one solution. If it has a solution, this solution is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(t)=T(t) x+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) f(s) d s, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Definition 2.4.3. A function $u \in C([0, T], X)$ is said to be a mild solution of (2.10) corresponding to the initial state $x_{0} \in X$ and the input $f \in L^{1}([0, T], X)$ if $u$ is given by (2.11).

The definition of the mild solution of (2.10) coincides when $f \equiv 0$ with the definition of $T(t) x_{0}$ as the mild solution of the corresponding homogeneous equation. It is therefore clear that not every mild solution of (2.10) is a (classical) solution even in the case $f \equiv 0$.

Theorem 2.4.4. Let $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq$ $0\}$, let $f \in L^{1}([0, T], X)$ be continuous on $(0, T)$ and let

$$
v(t)=\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) f(s) d s, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T .
$$

The initial value problem (2.10) has a solution $u$ on $[0, T)$ for every $x \in D(A)$ if one of the following conditions is satisfied;
(i) $v(t)$ is continuously differentiable on $(0, T)$.
(ii) $v(t) \in D(A)$ for $0<t<T$ and $A v(t)$ is continuous on ( $0, T$ ).

Corollary 2.4.5. Let $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}, f(s)$ is continuously differentiable on $[0, T]$ then the initial value problem (2.10) has a solution $u$ on $[0, T)$ for every $x \in D(A)$.

Corollary 2.4.6. Let $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}$-semigroup $T(t)$ and $f \in L^{1}([0, T], X)$ be continuous on $(0, T)$. If $f(s) \in D(A)$, then the initial value problem (2.10) has a solution on $[0, T)$.

### 2.4.3 Semilinear Initial Value Problem and Perturbations Theory.

Consider the semilinear initial value problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{u}(t)=A u(t)+f(t, u(t)), \quad u(s)=\zeta \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in $X$ and $f:[0, \infty) \times X \rightarrow X$. The assumption on $A$ is that the initial value problem for the linear equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{u}(t)=A u(t) \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

is well posed in $0 \leq t \leq T$, as defined in Fattorini (1999), pp 207. Below, $S(t, s)$ denotes the solution operator of (2.13) is defined and strongly continuous in the triangle $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$.

Define a solution of (2.12) as a solution of the integral equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(t)=S(t, s) \zeta(t)+\int_{s}^{t} S(t, \tau) f(\tau, u(\tau)) d \tau \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

We summarize in this section the necessary existence-uniqueness theory of (2.12). Result will be proved under two hypotheses on $f(t, u)$. The second hypothesis is stronger than the first.

Hypothesis I. $f(t, u)$ is strongly measurable in $t$ for fixed $u$. For every $c>0$ there exists $K(\cdot, c) \in L^{1}(0, T)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|f(t, u)\| \leq K(t, c) \quad(0 \leq t \leq T,\|u\| \leq c) \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hypothesis II. $f(t, u)$ is strongly measurable in $t$ for fixed $u$. For every $c>0$ there exists $K(\cdot, c), L(\cdot, c) \in L^{1}(0, T)$ such that (2.17) holds and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|f\left(t, u^{\prime}\right)-f(t, u)\right\| \leq L(t, c)\left\|u^{\prime}-u\right\| \quad\left(0 \leq t \leq T,\|u\|,\left\|u^{\prime}\right\| \leq c\right) \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 2.4.7. Assume Hypothesis II holds in $0 \leq t \leq T$. Then the integral equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(t)=\zeta(t)+\int_{s}^{t} S(t, \tau) f(\tau, u(\tau)) d \tau \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a unique solution in some interval $s \leq t \leq T^{\prime}$, where $s \leq T^{\prime} \leq T$.

Theorem 2.4.8. Let $u_{1}(\cdot)$ (respectively, $u_{2}(\cdot)$ ) be solution of (2.17) in $s \leq t \leq$ $T^{\prime}$ with $\zeta(t)=\zeta_{1}(t)$. (respectively, with $\zeta(t)=\zeta_{2}(t)$ ). Let $c$ be a bound for $\left\|u_{1}(t)\right\|,\left\|u_{2}(t)\right\|$ in $s \leq t \leq T^{\prime}$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u_{1}(t)-u_{2}(t)\right\| \leq \sup _{s \leq t \leq T^{\prime}}\left\|\zeta_{1}(t)-\zeta_{2}(t)\right\| \exp \left(M \int_{s}^{t} L(\tau, c) d \tau\right)(s \leq t \leq T) .( \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular, if $u_{1}(\cdot)$ (respectively, $\left.u_{2}(\cdot)\right)$ is solution of (2.14) with $\zeta=\zeta_{1}$ (respectively, with $\zeta=\zeta_{2}$ ), then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u_{1}(t)-u_{2}(t)\right\| \leq M\left\|\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}\right\| \exp \left(M \int_{s}^{t} L(\tau, c) d \tau\right) \quad(s \leq t \leq T) \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 2.4.9. Let $u(t)$ be a solution of (2.17) in an interval $\left[s, T^{\prime}\right)$. Assume that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|u(t)\| \leq c \quad\left(s \leq t \leq T^{\prime}\right) \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $u(\cdot)$ can be extended to an interval $\left[s, T^{\prime \prime}\right)$ with $T^{\prime \prime}>T^{\prime}$ (that is, a solution of (2.17) coinciding with $u(\cdot)$ in $s \leq t \leq T^{\prime}$ exists in $\left.\left[0, T^{\prime \prime}\right]\right)$.

Corollary 2.4.10. The solution $u(\cdot)$ of (2.17) exists in $s \leq t \leq T$ or in an interval $\left[s, T_{m}\right), T_{m} \leq T$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{t \rightarrow T_{m}^{-}}\|u(t)\| \leq \infty \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Corollary 2.4.11. Assume that there exists $K(\cdot) \in L^{1}(0, T)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|f(t, u)\| \leq K(t)(1+\|u\|) \quad(0 \leq t \leq T, u \in X) \tag{2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then (2.20) holds in every interval where the solution $u(t)$ of (2.17) exists accordingly, $u(t)$ exists in $s \leq t \leq T$.

The following theorem is one of the main tools in the proof of the existence of periodic mild solutions for the semilinear impulsive peridic control systems with parameter perturbations discussed in this thesis. Its proof can be found in Fattorini (1999), pp. 213.

Theorem 2.4.12. Let the Cauchy problem for (2.13) be well posed in $s \leq t \leq T$ and let $\{B(t), 0 \leq t \leq T\}$ be a family of bounded linear operators in $X$ such that (a) for each $u \in X, t \rightarrow B(t) u$ is strongly measurable, (b) there exists $\alpha(\cdot) \in$ $L^{1}(0, T)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|B(t)\| \leq \alpha(t) \quad(0 \leq t \leq T) \tag{2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the Cauchy problem for

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{u}(t)=(A(t)+B(t)) u(t) \tag{2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

is well posed in $0 \leq t \leq T$, solution of (2.24) with $u(s)=\zeta$ understood as solutions of the integral equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(t)=S(t, s) \zeta+\int_{s}^{t} S(t, \tau) B(\tau) u(\tau) d \tau \tag{2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $U(t, s)$ be the solution operator of (2.24), solutions of the inhomogeneous equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{u}(t)=(A(t)+B(t)) u(t)+f(t), \quad u(s)=\zeta \tag{2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $f(\cdot) \in L^{1}(0, T)$, understood as solutions of the integral equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(t)=S(t, s) \zeta+\int_{s}^{t} S(t, \tau) B(\tau)(u(\tau)+f(\tau)) d \tau \tag{2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

can be expressed by the variation of constants formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(t)=U(t, s) \zeta+\int_{s}^{t} U(t, \tau) f(\tau) d \tau \tag{2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 2.5 Gronwall's Lemma

Theorem 2.5.1. For $t>t_{0}$ let a nonnegative piecewise continuous function $u(t)$ satisfy

$$
u(t) \leq c+\int_{t_{0}}^{t} v(s) u(s) d s+\sum_{t_{0} \leq \tau_{n}<t} b_{n} u\left(\tau_{n}\right)
$$

where $c \geq 0, b_{n} \geq 0, v(s)>0, u(t)$ has discontinuous points of the first kind at $\tau_{n}$. Then we have

$$
u(t) \leq c \prod_{t_{0} \leq \tau_{n}<t}\left(1+b_{n}\right) \exp \left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t} v(s) d s\right)
$$

## CHAPTER III

## LINEAR PERIODIC SYSTEMS WITH IMPULSES

In this chapter, we study the existence and uniqueness of periodic mild solution for linear periodic systems with impulses. The first section contains some notations and basic assumptions. In the second section, regularity of mild solution, existence and uniqueness results of periodic mild solutions for homogenous linear impulsive periodic systems will be presented. In the third section, we will discuss the existence of periodic mild solutions for the nonhomogenous linear impulsive periodic control systems. Finally, in Section 4, we will discuss the existence of periodic mild solutions for the linear impulsive periodic systems with parameter perturbations.

### 3.1 Notations

Let $I:=\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ be a closed bounded interval of the real line and define the sets $D:=\left\{0=\tau_{0}<\tau_{1}<\tau_{2}<\tau_{3}<\ldots\right\} \subset[0, \infty)$.

Definition 3.1.1. A sequence $\left(\tau_{k}\right)$ is said to be an impulsive moment if $0=\tau_{0}<$ $\tau_{1}<\tau_{2}<\tau_{3}<\ldots$ and $\tau_{k} \rightarrow \infty$ as $k \rightarrow \infty$.

We now introduce the piecewise continuous function spaces. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $0<T_{0}<\infty$.
(1) $P C([0, \infty), X)$ is the set of all functions $x:[0, \infty) \rightarrow X$ which are continuous at $t \neq \tau_{k}, x$ is left continuous at $t=\tau_{k}$ and $x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)$exists for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
(2) $P C_{T_{0}}([0, \infty), X)$ is the set of all functions $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ such that $x(t)=x\left(t+T_{0}\right)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

### 3.2 Homogenous Linear Impulsive Periodic Systems

We consider the following homogenous linear impulsive periodic systems

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t), & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{3.1}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t), & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$. Suppose that system (A.5) satisfies the following assumption (A1).

Assumption (A1) ;
(A1.1) $0=\tau_{0}<\tau_{1}<\tau_{2}<\ldots<\tau_{k}<\ldots, \quad \tau_{k} \rightarrow \infty \quad$ as $k \rightarrow \infty \quad$ and there exists a positive integer $\sigma$ such that $\tau_{k+\sigma}=\tau_{k}+T_{0}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
(A1.2) $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}-$ semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in $X$.
(A1.3) $B_{k} \in \mathcal{L}(X)$ such that $B_{k+\sigma}=B_{k}$.

### 3.2.1 Impulsive Evolution Operator

Definition 3.2.1. Let assumption (A1) hold. An operator value function $U(t, s)$ with values in $\mathcal{L}(X)$, defined on the triangle $\Delta \equiv\{0 \leq s \leq t \leq a\}$ with $t, s \in\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right]$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$, given by

$$
U(t, s)=\left\{\begin{array}{lc}
T(t-s), & \tau_{k-1} \leq s \leq t \leq \tau_{k}  \tag{3.2}\\
T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right) T\left(\tau_{k}-s\right), & \tau_{k-1}<s \leq \tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}, \\
T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\prod_{j=i+1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right] & \left(I+B_{i}\right) T\left(\tau_{i}-s\right) \\
& \text { for } i<k, \tau_{i-1}<s \leq \tau_{i}<\ldots<\tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}
\end{array}\right.
$$

is called an impulsive evolution operator.

Proposition 3.2.1. Let assumption (A1) hold and $\{U(t, s), 0 \leq s \leq t \leq a\}$ be a family of impulsive evolution operators. For each fixed $T_{0}=\tau_{\sigma}>0$, then the following conditions are satisfied :
(1) $U(t, t)=I, \quad(I$ is the identity operator on $X)$.
(2) $U(t, s)=U(t, r) U(r, s)$ for all $0 \leq s \leq r \leq t \leq a$.
(3) $U\left(t+K T_{0}, s+K T_{0}\right)=U(t, s)$ for all $K \in \mathbb{N}$ and $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}$ with $T_{0} \leq a$.

Proof. (1) Since $T(0)=I, U(t, t)=T(0)=I$. (2) By substitution in equation (A.3) and using semigroup property that $T(t+s)=T(t) T(s)$, the relation (2) follows. By assumption (A1.1), it is easy to prove (3).

Proposition 3.2.2. Let assumption (A1) hold. If $\{U(t, s), 0 \leq s \leq t \leq a\}$ is a family of impulsive evolution operators, then there exist $M>1$ and $\omega>0$ such that

$$
\|U(t, s)\| \leq M \exp \left(\omega(t-s)+\sum_{s<\tau_{n}<t} \ln \left(M\left\|I+B_{n}\right\|\right)\right) .
$$

for all $0 \leq s \leq t \leq a$.
Proof. Suppose $\{U(t, s), 0 \leq s \leq t \leq a\}$ is a family of impulsive evolution operators. Let $t, s \in\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right]$ for $k \in \mathbb{N}$. By assumption (A1) and Theorem 2.3.2(1), there exist $M>1$ and $\omega>0$ such that

$$
\|U(t, s)\|=\|T(t-s)\| \leq M e^{\omega(t-s)} \quad \text { for } \quad \tau_{k-1} \leq s<t \leq \tau_{k}
$$

For $\tau_{k-1} \leq s \leq \tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|U(t, s)\| & =\left\|T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right) T\left(\tau_{k}-s\right)\right\| \\
& \leq\left\|T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\right\|\left\|I+B_{k}\right\|\left\|T\left(\tau_{k}-s\right)\right\| \\
& \leq M e^{\omega\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)}\left\|I+B_{k}\right\| M e^{\omega\left(\tau_{k}-s\right)} \\
& =M \exp \left(\omega(t-s)+\ln \left(M\left\|I+B_{k}\right\|\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

For $\tau_{i-1} \leq s \leq \tau_{i}<\ldots<\tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|U(t, s)\| & =\left\|T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right) T\left(\tau_{k}-\tau_{k-1}\right) \ldots\left(I+B_{i}\right) T\left(\tau_{i}-s\right)\right\| \\
& \leq\left\|T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\right\|\left(\prod_{j=i+1}^{k}\left\|I+B_{j}\right\|\left\|T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right\|\right)\left\|I+B_{i}\right\|\left\|T\left(\tau_{i}-s\right)\right\| \\
& \leq M e^{\omega\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)}\left(\prod_{j=i+1}^{k} M\left\|I+B_{j}\right\| e^{\omega\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)}\right)\left\|I+B_{i}\right\| M e^{\omega\left(\tau_{i}-s\right)} \\
& =M \exp \left(\omega(t-s)+\sum_{s<\tau_{n}<t} \ln \left(M\left\|I+B_{n}\right\|\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

This completes the proof.

Corollary 3.2.3. Let assumption (A1) hold and $\{U(t, s), 0 \leq s \leq t \leq a\}$ be a family of impulsive evolution operators, then

$$
\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq a}\|U(t, s)\|<\infty
$$

for all $a>0$.

Proof. Let $a>0$ be fixed. By Proposition 3.2.2, there exist constants $M>1$ and $\omega>0$ such that

$$
\|U(t, s)\| \leq M \exp \left(\omega(t-s)+\sum_{s<\tau_{n}<t} \ln \left(M\left\|I+B_{n}\right\|\right)\right)
$$

for all $0 \leq s \leq t \leq a$. Since

$$
\omega(t-s)+\sum_{s<\tau_{n}<t} \ln \left(M\left\|I+B_{n}\right\|\right) \leq \omega a+\sum_{0<\tau_{n} \leq a} \ln \left(M\left\|I+B_{n}\right\|\right)
$$

for all $0 \leq s \leq t \leq a$, this implies that

$$
\sup _{0 \leq s<t \leq a}\|U(t, s)\| \leq M \exp \left(\omega a+\sum_{0<\tau_{n} \leq a} \ln \left(M\left\|I+B_{n}\right\|\right)\right) .
$$

This completes the proof.

Corollary 3.2.4. Let assumption (A1) hold and $\{U(t, s), 0 \leq s \leq t \leq a\}$ be a family of impulsive evolution operators. For each $a>0$ and $\nu \in \mathbb{R}$, there exists $K>0$ such that

$$
\|U(t, s)\|<K e^{\nu(t-s)}
$$

for all $0 \leq s \leq t \leq a$.

Proof. Let $a>0$ and $\nu \in \mathbb{R}$ be given. By Corollary A.2, there exists a constant $K_{1}>0$ such that

$$
\|U(t, s)\| \leq K_{1}=K_{1} e^{-\nu(t-s)} e^{\nu(t-s)} \leq K_{1} e^{|\nu| a} e^{\nu(t-s)}
$$

for all $0 \leq s \leq t \leq a$. We let $K:=K_{1} e^{|\nu| a}$, this implies that

$$
\|U(t, s)\|<K e^{\nu(t-s)}
$$

for all $0 \leq s \leq t \leq a$.

### 3.2.2 Definitions of Solutions

Definition 3.2.2. Let assumption (A1) hold. The impulsive system (A.5) is said to have a classical solution if for every $x_{0} \in D(A)$ there exists a function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ satisfies the following properties :

1. $x \in P C([0, \infty), X) \cap C^{1}((0, \infty) \backslash D, X)$,
2. For $t>0, x(t) \in D(A)$ and $\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)$ where $t \neq \tau_{k}$,
3. $x(0)=x_{0}$ and $\triangle x(t)=B_{k} x(t)$ where $t=\tau_{k}$.

Definition 3.2.3. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a mild solution of system (A.5) with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0}$ if $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0} \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
U(t, 0)= \begin{cases}T(t) & 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}  \tag{3.4}\\ T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right], & \tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}\end{cases}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

Definition 3.2.4. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a periodic mild solution of system (A.5) if it is a mild solution and there exists $T_{0}>0$ such that $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

Proposition 3.2.5. Let assumption (A1) hold and $\{U(t, 0), 0 \leq t \leq a\}$ be a family of impulsive evolution operators. For each fixed $T_{0}=\tau_{\sigma}>0$, then the following conditions are satisfied:
(1) $U(0,0)=I$,
(2) $U(t, 0)=U(\bar{t}, 0)\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{M}$ where $t=\bar{t}+M T_{0}$ for $\bar{t} \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and $M \in$ $\mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$.

Proof. (1) Since $T(0)=I$ with equation (A.6), $U(0,0)=I$.
(2) We consider the following impulsive system for $t \in\left[M T_{0},(M+1) T_{0}\right]$;

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t), & & t \neq \tau_{M \sigma+m},  \tag{3.5}\\
\Delta x(t)=B_{M \sigma+m} x(t), & & t=\tau_{M \sigma+m}, m=1,2, \ldots, \sigma \\
x\left(M T_{0}\right)=\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{M} x_{0}, & & x(0)=x_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\quad M T_{0}=\tau_{M \sigma}<\tau_{M \sigma+1}<\ldots<\tau_{(M+1) \sigma}=(M+1) T_{0}$
and $\quad \Delta x\left(\tau_{M \sigma+m}\right)=x\left(\tau_{M \sigma+m}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{M \sigma+m}^{-}\right)$for all $M \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$.
First, we consider the impulsive system for $M=0$, that is for $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$;

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t), \quad t \neq \tau_{m}  \tag{3.6}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{m} x(t), \quad t=\tau_{m}, m=1,2, \ldots, \sigma \\
x(0) & =x_{0}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\quad 0<\tau_{1}<\tau_{2}<\ldots<\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0} \quad$ and $\quad \Delta x\left(\tau_{m}\right)=x\left(\tau_{m}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{m}^{-}\right)$.
For $t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$;

$$
\begin{cases}\dot{x}(t)=A x(t), & t \neq 0, \\ x(0)=x_{0}, & t=0 .\end{cases}
$$

The mild solution is $\quad x(t)=T(t) x_{0}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}$.
For $t \in\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$;

$$
\left\{\begin{aligned}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t), & & t \neq \tau_{1} \\
x\left(\tau_{1}^{+}\right) & =\left(I+B_{1}\right) x\left(\tau_{1}\right), & & t=\tau_{1}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

The mild solution is

$$
\begin{aligned}
x(t) & =T\left(t-\tau_{1}\right) x\left(\tau_{1}^{+}\right) \\
& =T\left(t-\tau_{1}\right)\left(I+B_{1}\right) x\left(\tau_{1}\right) \\
& =T\left(t-\tau_{1}\right)\left(I+B_{1}\right) T\left(\tau_{1}\right) x_{0}
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $\quad \tau_{1}<t \leq \tau_{2}$.
Proceeding in this way, we can be repeated on $\left(\tau_{m}, \tau_{m+1}\right], m=2,3, \ldots, \sigma-1$ to get the solution of system (3.6) on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0}$ is given by

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}
$$

where $U(t, 0)$ is defined in (A.6).
Next, we consider the impulsive system for $M=1$, that is for $t \in\left[T_{0}, 2 T_{0}\right]$;

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t), & & t \neq \tau_{\sigma+m}  \tag{3.7}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{\sigma+m} x(t), & & t=\tau_{\sigma+m}, m=1,2, \ldots, \sigma \\
x\left(T_{0}\right) & =U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}, & & x(0)=x_{0}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\quad T_{0}=\tau_{\sigma}<\tau_{\sigma+1}<\ldots<\tau_{2 \sigma}=2 T_{0}$ and $\Delta x\left(\tau_{\sigma+m}\right)=x\left(\tau_{\sigma+m}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{\sigma+m}^{-}\right)$. For $t \in\left[\tau_{\sigma}, \tau_{\sigma+1}\right]$;

$$
\left\{\begin{aligned}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t), & & t \neq \tau_{\sigma} \\
x\left(T_{0}\right) & =U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}, & & t=\tau_{\sigma}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

The mild solution is $\quad x(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{\sigma}\right) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0} \quad$ for all $\quad \tau_{\sigma} \leq t \leq \tau_{\sigma+1}$.
For $t \in\left(\tau_{\sigma+1}, \tau_{\sigma+2}\right]$;

$$
\left\{\begin{aligned}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t), & & t \neq \tau_{\sigma+1} \\
x\left(\tau_{\sigma+1}^{+}\right) & =\left(I+B_{\sigma+1}\right) x\left(\tau_{\sigma+1}\right), & & t=\tau_{\sigma+1}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

The mild solution is

$$
\begin{align*}
x(t) & =T\left(t-\tau_{\sigma+1}\right) x\left(\tau_{\sigma+1}^{+}\right) \\
& =T\left(t-\tau_{\sigma+1}\right)\left(I+B_{\sigma+1}\right) x\left(\tau_{\sigma+1}\right)  \tag{3.8}\\
& =T\left(t-\tau_{\sigma+1}\right)\left(I+B_{\sigma+1}\right) T\left(\tau_{\sigma+1}-\tau_{\sigma}\right) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0},
\end{align*}
$$

for all $\quad \tau_{\sigma+1}<t \leq \tau_{\sigma+2}$.
By similarity procedure, we can be repeated on $\left(\tau_{\sigma+m}, \tau_{\sigma+m+1}\right], m=$ $2,3, \ldots, \sigma-1$ to get the mild solution of system (3.7) on $\left[T_{0}, 2 T_{0}\right]$ with initial condition $x\left(T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
x(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{\sigma+m}\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{m}\left(I+B_{\sigma+j}\right) T\left(\tau_{\sigma+j}-\tau_{\sigma+j-1}\right)\right] U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0} \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $B_{\sigma+m}=B_{m}, \tau_{\sigma+m}=\tau_{m}+T_{0}$ and $t=\bar{t}+T_{0}$ for all $0 \leq \bar{t} \leq T_{0}$ and $m \in \mathbb{N}$, then the solution (3.9) can be rewritten in the form

$$
\begin{aligned}
x(t) & =T\left(t-\tau_{\sigma+m}\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{m}\left(I+B_{\sigma+j}\right) T\left(\tau_{\sigma+j}-\tau_{\sigma+j-1}\right)\right] U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0} \\
& =T\left(\bar{t}+T_{0}-\left(\tau_{m}+T_{0}\right)\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{m}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}+T_{0}-\left(\tau_{j-1}+T_{0}\right)\right)\right] U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0} \\
& =T\left(\bar{t}-\tau_{m}\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{m}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right] U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}
\end{aligned}
$$

Then by Definition 3.2.3, we have

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}=U(\bar{t}, 0) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}, \quad \text { for all } \quad 0 \leq \bar{t} \leq T_{0} .
$$

That is for $M=1$ with $t=\bar{t}+T_{0}$, we obtain

$$
U(t, 0)=U(\bar{t}, 0) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right), \quad \text { for all } \quad 0 \leq \bar{t} \leq T_{0}
$$

By mathematical induction, we proceeding in similar way. Then the mild solution of system (3.5) on $\left[M T_{0},(M+1) T_{0}\right]$ with initial condition $x\left(M T_{0}\right)=$ $\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{M} x_{0}$ is given by

$$
x(t)=T\left(\bar{t}-\tau_{m}\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{m}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right]\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{M} x_{0}
$$

Again by Definition 3.2.3, we have

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}=U(\bar{t}, 0)\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{M} x_{0}, \quad \text { for all } \quad 0 \leq \bar{t} \leq T_{0} .
$$

That is for $M \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$ with $t=\bar{t}+M T_{0}$, we obtain

$$
U(t, 0)=U(\bar{t}, 0)\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{M}, \quad \text { for all } \quad 0 \leq \bar{t} \leq T_{0}
$$

This completes the proof.

Remark 3.1. If $\{T(t), t>0\}$ is a compact semigroup in $X$, then $U(t, 0)$ is a compact operator. Particularly, $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ is also a compact operator.

Since $\{T(t), t>0\}$ is a compact semigroup, then $T\left(\tau_{k}-\tau_{k-1}\right)$ is compact for all $\tau_{k}>\tau_{k-1}$ and $k \in \mathbb{N}$. From equation (A.6) and the fact that $B_{k} \in \mathcal{L}(x)$, then $U(t, 0)$ is a compact operator for $t>0$. Particularly, $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ is also a compact operator.

Lemma 3.2.6. If $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is a $C_{0}$-semigroup, then for every $x \in X, t \mapsto$ $T(t-m) x$ is a continuous $X$-valued function on $[m, \infty)$ and its right limit exists at $m$ for all $m \geq 0$.

Proof. Suppose that $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is a $C_{0}$-semigroup generated by $A$. Let $x \in X$ and $t-m \geq h \geq 0$, then by the semigroup property

$$
T(t-m+h) x-T(t-m) x=T(t-m)[T(h) x-x] .
$$

By Theorem 2.3.2(1), there exist constants $M \geq 1$ and $\omega \geq 0$ such that $\|T(t)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq M e^{\omega t}$ for all $t \geq 0$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|T(t-m+h) x-T(t-m) x\|_{X} & \leq\|T(t-m)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|T(h) x-x\|_{X} \\
& \leq M e^{\omega(t-m)}\|T(h) x-x\|_{X}
\end{aligned}
$$

and by the $C_{0}$-property, we obtain

$$
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0}\|T(t-m+h) x-T(t-m) x\|_{X}=0
$$

Similarly for $t-m \geq h \geq 0$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|T(t-m-h) x-T(t-m) x\|_{X} & \leq\|T(t-m-h)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|T(h) x-x\|_{X} \\
& \leq M e^{\omega(t-m-h)}\|T(h) x-x\|_{X} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence

$$
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0}\|T(t-m-h) x-T(t-m) x\|_{X}=0
$$

and

$$
\lim _{t \rightarrow m^{+}} T(t-m) x=T(0) x=I x=x .
$$

This implies that $t \mapsto T(t-m) x$ is a continuous $X$-valued function on $[m, \infty)$ and its right limit exists at $m$. This completes the proof.

Lemma 3.2.7. If $A$ is an infinitesimal generator of $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$, then for every $x_{0} \in D(A), t \mapsto T(t-m) x_{0}$ is differentiable for $t>m$ with the derivatives given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} T(t-m) x_{0}=A T(t-m) x_{0}=T(t-m) A x_{0}, \quad \text { for all } t>m \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Suppose that $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is a $C_{0}$-semigroup generated by $A$. For $t \geq 0$ and $x_{0} \in D(A)$ we show that $t \mapsto T(t-m) x_{0}$ is differentiable for $t>m$, that is we must show that the right and left derivatives of $T(t-m) x_{0}$ exist and are equal
to equation (3.10). By definition of the right derivative is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d^{+}}{d t} T(t-m) x_{0} & :=\lim _{h \rightarrow 0}\left(\frac{T(t-m+h) x_{0}-T(t-m) x_{0}}{h}\right) \\
& =\lim _{h \rightarrow 0}\left(\frac{T(h)-I}{h}\right) T(t-m) x_{0} \\
& =A T(t-m) x_{0}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0}\left(\frac{T(t-m+h) x_{0}-T(t-m) x_{0}}{h}\right) & =\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} T(t-m)\left(\frac{T(h)-I}{h}\right) x_{0} \\
& =T(t-m) A x_{0}
\end{aligned}
$$

thus, we have

$$
\frac{d^{+}}{d t} T(t-m) x_{0}=A T(t-m) x_{0}=T(t-m) A x_{0}
$$

This proves the existence of the right derivative and that $T(t-m) x_{0} \in D(A)$. For the left derivative it suffices to verify that for $t-m \geq h$,

$$
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0}\left\|\left(\frac{T(t-m) x_{0}-T(t-m-h) x_{0}}{h}\right)-T(t-m) A x_{0}\right\|_{x}=0 .
$$

By using the semigroup property and Theorem 2.3.2(1), there exist constants $M \geq 1$ and $\omega \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|\left(\frac{T(t-m) x_{0}-T(t-m-h) x_{0}}{h}\right)-T(t-m) A x_{0}\right\|_{X} \\
& \quad=\left\|T(t-m-h)\left[\left(\frac{T(h) x_{0}-x_{0}}{h}\right)-T(h) A x_{0}\right]\right\|_{X} \\
& \quad \leq\|T(t-m-h)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|\left(\frac{T(h) x_{0}-x_{0}}{h}-A x_{0}\right)+(I-T(h)) A x_{0}\right\|_{X} \\
& \quad \leq M \exp ^{\omega(t-m-h)}\left(\left\|\frac{T(h) x_{0}-x_{0}}{h}-A x_{0}\right\|_{X}+\left\|(I-T(h)) A x_{0}\right\|_{X}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of the semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ and $T(t-m)$ is continuous, the expressions within the bracket converge to zero as $h \rightarrow 0$. Thus

$$
\frac{d^{-}}{d t} T(t-m) x_{0}=T(t-m) A x_{0} .
$$

Since $T(t-m) A x_{0}=A T(t-m) x_{0}$ and the continuity of $T(t-m)$, then

$$
\frac{d^{-}}{d t} T(t-m) x_{0}=A T(t-m) x_{0}=T(t-m) A x_{0} \quad \text { for all } t>m .
$$

Thus for $x_{0} \in D(A)$, both the right and left derivative exist and are identical. Hence $t \mapsto T(t-m) x_{0}$ is differentiable for $t>m$.

Theorem 3.2.8. Let assumption (A1) hold and $x_{0} \in X$. Then a function $x:[0, \infty) \rightarrow X$ defined by

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}
$$

or

$$
x(t)= \begin{cases}T(t) x_{0}, & 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}  \tag{3.11}\\ T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right] x_{0}, & \tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}\end{cases}
$$

belongs to $P C([0, \infty), X)$ and $\triangle x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=B_{k} x\left(\tau_{k}\right)$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
Proof. Let $x_{0} \in X$. For $t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$, we obtain

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}=T(t) x_{0} .
$$

By Lemma 3.2.6, we have $T(t) x_{0}$ is continuous on $\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$ and

$$
x\left(0^{+}\right)=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}} T(t) x_{0}=x_{0} .
$$

For $t \in\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$, we obtain

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right] x_{0}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
Define $\quad x_{k}:=\left[\prod_{j=1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right] x_{0}$, then $x(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}$.
Again by Lemma 3.2.6, we have $T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}$ is continuous on $\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$ and

$$
x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)=\lim _{t \rightarrow \tau_{k}^{+}} T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}=x_{k} .
$$

That is, $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ and

$$
\triangle x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=\left(I+B_{k}\right) x\left(\tau_{k}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=B_{k} x\left(\tau_{k}\right)
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$. This completes the proof.
Corollary 3.2.9. Let assumption (A1) hold and $\{U(t, s), 0 \leq s \leq t<\infty\}$ be a family of impulsive evolution operators. For each $s \geq 0$ and $x \in X$, a function $U(\cdot, s) x:[s, \infty) \rightarrow X$ belongs to $P C([s, \infty), X)$.

Proof. Let $x_{s} \in X$. For $0 \leq s \leq t \leq \tau_{1}$, we obtain

$$
x(t)=U(t, s) x_{s}=T(t-s) x_{s}
$$

By Lemma 3.2.6, we have $T(t-s) x_{s}$ is continuous on $\left[s, \tau_{1}\right]$ and

$$
x\left(s^{+}\right)=\lim _{t \rightarrow s^{+}} T(t-s) x_{s}=x_{s}
$$

For $\tau_{k-1} \leq s \leq \tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}$, we obtain

$$
x(t)=U(t, s) x_{s}=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right) T\left(\tau_{k}-s\right) x_{s} \quad \text { for all } \quad k \in \mathbb{N} .
$$

Define $\quad x_{k}=\left(I+B_{k}\right) T\left(\tau_{k}-s\right) x_{s}$, then $\quad x(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}$.
Again by Lemma 3.2.6, we have $T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}$ is continuous on $\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$ and

$$
x\left(s^{+}\right)=\lim _{t \rightarrow s^{+}} T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}=x_{k} .
$$

For $\tau_{i-1}<s \leq \tau_{i}<\ldots<\tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
x(t) & =U(t, s) x_{s} \\
& =T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\prod_{j=i+1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right]\left(I+B_{i}\right) T\left(\tau_{i}-s\right) x_{s},
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
Define $\quad x_{k}:=\left[\prod_{j=1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right]\left(I+B_{i}\right) T\left(\tau_{i}-s\right) x_{s}$, then

$$
x(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k} .
$$

Also by Lemma 3.2.6, we have $T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}$ is continuous on $t \in\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$ and

$$
x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)=\lim _{t \rightarrow \tau_{k}^{+}} T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}=x_{k} .
$$

That is, $x \in P C([s, \infty), X)$ and

$$
\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=\left(I+B_{k}\right) x\left(\tau_{k}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=B_{k} x\left(\tau_{k}\right)
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$. This completes the proof.

### 3.2.3 Regularity of Mild Solutions

Theorem 3.2.10. Let assumption (A1) hold. If $D(A)$ is an invariant subspace of $T(t)$ and $\left(I+B_{k}\right)$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $t \in[0, \infty)$, then for every $x_{0} \in D(A)$ the mild solution of impulsive system (A.5) is a classical solution.

Proof. Assume that $x$ is a mild solution of impulsive system (A.5) with initial condition $x_{0} \in D(A)$. Next, we want to show that the mild solution is differentiable on $\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right)$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$. By Lemma 3.2.7, we have $x$ is differentiable on $\left(0, \tau_{1}\right)$,

$$
\dot{x}(t)=\frac{d}{d t} U(t, 0) x_{0}=\frac{d}{d t} T(t) x_{0}=A T(t) x_{0}=A x(t)
$$

and $x(t)=T(t) x_{0} \in D(A)$. Since $D(A)$ is an invariant subspace of $T(t)$ and $\left(I+B_{k}\right)$,

$$
x_{k}:=\left[\prod_{j=1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right] x_{0} \in D(A),
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $t \in[0, \infty)$. By Lemma 3.2.7, we have $x$ is differentiable on $\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{x}(t) & =\frac{d}{d t} U(t, 0) x_{0}=\frac{d}{d t} T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right] x_{0} \\
& =\frac{d}{d t} T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}=A T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}=A x(t)
\end{aligned}
$$

and $x(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k} \in D(A)$.

That is, $x \in P C([0, \infty), X) \cap C^{1}((0, \infty) \backslash D, X)$ and $\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)$, where $t \neq \tau_{k}$. Therefore it follows from Theorem 3.2.8 that $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ and $\triangle x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=$ $B_{k} x\left(\tau_{k}\right)$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$. Hence, $x$ is a classical solution.

Corollary 3.2.11. Let assumption (A1) hold and $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ be a differential semigroup generated by $A$. If $D(A)$ is an invariant subspace of $T(t)$ and $\left(I+B_{k}\right)$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$, then for every $x_{0} \in X$ the mild solution of impulsive system (A.5) is a classical solution.

Proof. Since $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is a differential semigroup, $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ is $C_{0^{-}}$ semigroup. From Theorem 3.2.10, the proof follows immediately.

Corollary 3.2.12. Let assumption (A1) hold and $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ be an analytic semigroup generated by $A$. If $D(A)$ is an invariant subspace of $T(t)$ and $\left(I+B_{k}\right)$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$, then for every $x_{0} \in X$ the mild solution of impulsive system (A.5) is a classical solution.

Proof. This follows from the simple fact that every analytic semigroup is also a differentiable semigroup and $C_{0}$-semigroup. From Theorem 3.2.10, the proof follows immediately.

### 3.2.4 Existence and Uniqueness of periodic mild solutions

Theorem 3.2.13. Let assumption (A1) hold. System (A.5) has a periodic mild solution if and only if the operator $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ has a fixed point $x_{0} \in X$.

Proof. Let $x(t)$ be a periodic mild solution of system (A.5). Suppose $x(0)=x_{0}$ be the initial condition of system (A.5), then $x\left(T_{0}\right)=x(0)=x_{0}$. Since $x\left(T_{0}\right)=$ $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}, \quad x_{0}=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}$. That is, the operator $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ has a fixed point $x_{0} \in X$. Conversely, assume that $x_{0}$ be a fixed point of $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$. Use $x_{0}$ as
the initial condition of system (A.5), then the solution is $x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}$, where $t=\bar{t}+M T_{0}$ for all $\bar{t} \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and $M \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$. By assumption and Proposition A. $1(2)$, we have $x(t)=x\left(\bar{t}+M T_{0}\right)=U(\bar{t}, 0)\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{M} x_{0}=U(\bar{t}, 0) x_{0}=x(\bar{t})$. Hence $x$ is a periodic mild solution of system (A.5).

Theorem 3.2.14. Let assumption (A1) hold. Furthermore, assume that $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$. Then system (A.5) either has a unique trivial solution or have finitely many linearly independent nontrivial periodic mild solutions in $P C([0, \infty), X)$.

Proof. Since $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right): X \rightarrow X$ is a compact linear operator, applying Fredholm alternative theorem, we obtain $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ satisfy Fredholm alternative that either (a) or (b) holds : (a) The homogenous equations $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x=0$ have only the trivial solution $x=0$. That is $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ has only a unique fixed point $x=0$ (i.e., by Theorem A.3, this means that system (A.5) has a unique trivial solution). (b) The homogenous equations $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x=0$ have nontrivial solutions, then all of linearly independent nontrivial solutions are finite. Suppose all of nontrivial solutions $\quad x_{0}^{1}, x_{0}^{2}, \ldots, x_{0}^{m} \quad$ be such that $\quad\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x_{0}^{i}=0, \quad i=1,2, \ldots, m$. So $\quad x_{0}^{1}, x_{0}^{2}, \ldots, x_{0}^{m} \quad$ are fixed points of $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$. Again by Theorem A.3, this means that system (A.5) has periodic mild solutions, say $x^{1}, x^{2}, \ldots, x^{m}$ where $x^{i}$ are the solutions of system (A.5) corresponding to initial conditions $x^{i}(0)=x_{0}^{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, m$. Hence the number of linearly independent nontrivial periodic mild solutions of system (A.5) are finite.

### 3.3 Nonhomogeneous Linear Impulsive Periodic Control Systems

We consider the following nonhomogeneous linear impulsive periodic control systems

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+u(t), & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{3.12}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}, & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$. Suppose that system (A.7) satisfies assumption (A1). We impose the following assumption for the remaining.

Assumption (A2) ;
(A2.1) $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$.
(A2.2) $u \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ such that $u\left(t+T_{0}\right)=u(t)$.
(A2.3) $c_{k} \in X$ and $c_{k+\sigma}=c_{k}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

### 3.3.1 Definitions of Solutions

Definition 3.3.1. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a mild solution of system (A.7) with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0} \in X$ and the input $u \in L_{\text {loc }}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$ if $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

Definition 3.3.2. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a periodic mild solution of system (A.7) if it is a mild solution and there exists $T_{0}>0$ such that $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

Definition 3.3.3. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (A.7) if it is a mild solution and $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

### 3.3.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions

Consider the nonhomogeneous system without impulses

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+u(t), \quad t>0  \tag{3.14}\\
x(0)=x_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in $X$.

Lemma 3.3.1. If $u \in L_{l o c}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$, then for every $x_{0} \in X$ the initial value problem (A.9) has a unique solution which satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
x(t)=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T_{0} \tag{3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. See Pazy (1983), pp. 106.

Theorem 3.3.2. Let assumptions (A1) and (A2) hold. If $u \in L_{l o c}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$, then system (A.7) has a unique mild solution $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$.

Proof. For $t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$, Lemma A. 5 implies that system

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+u(t), \quad 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}, \quad x(0)=x_{0} \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a unique mild solution on $I_{1}=\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$ which satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}(t)=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s, \quad t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right] . \tag{3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, define

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right)=T\left(\tau_{1}\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{1}} T\left(\tau_{1}-s\right) u(s) d s \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $x_{1}(\cdot)$ is left continuous at $\tau_{1}$.
Next, on $I_{2}=\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$, consider system

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+u(t), \quad \tau_{1}<t \leq \tau_{2}, \quad x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}^{+}\right)=\left(I+B_{1}\right) x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right)+c_{1}, \tag{3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $x_{1} \in X$, we can use Lemma A. 5 again to get a unique mild solution on $\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right.$ ] which satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{2}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{1}\right)\left[\left(I+B_{1}\right) x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right)+c_{1}\right]+\int_{\tau_{1}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s \tag{3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, define $x_{2}\left(\tau_{2}\right)$ accordingly so that $x_{2}(\cdot)$ is left continuous at $\tau_{2}$.
It is easy to see that Lemma A. 5 can be applied to interval $\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$ to verify that $x_{2}\left(\tau_{2}\right) \in X$. Proceeding in this way, we can be repeated on $I_{k}=\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right], k=$ $3,4, \ldots, \sigma\left(\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}\right)$ to get a mild solution

$$
x_{k}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k-1}\right)\left[\left(I+B_{k-1}\right) x_{k-1}\left(\tau_{k-1}\right)+c_{k-1}\right]+\int_{\tau_{k-1}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s
$$

for $t \in\left(\tau_{k-}, \tau_{k}\right]$ and define $x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right)$ accordingly with $x_{k}(\cdot)$ left continuous at $\tau_{k}$ and $x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right) \in X, k=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$.

Thus we obtain $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is a unique mild solution of system (A.7) and given by

$$
x(t)= \begin{cases}x_{1}(t), & 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}, \\ x_{k}(t), & \tau_{k-1}<t \leq \tau_{k}, k=2,3, \ldots, \sigma\end{cases}
$$

Next, we use mathematical induction to show that (A.8) is satisfied on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. First, (A.8) is satisfied on $\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$. If (A.8) is satisfied on $\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right]$, then for $t \in\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
x(t) & =x_{k+1}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\left(I+B_{k}\right) x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+c_{k}\right]+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s \\
& =T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right) x\left(\tau_{k}\right)+T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) c_{k}+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= & T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right)\left[U\left(\tau_{k}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{k}} U\left(\tau_{k}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{i}<\tau_{k}} U\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{i}\right) c_{i}\right] \\
& +T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) c_{k}+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s \\
= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{k}} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{i}<\tau_{k}} U\left(t, \tau_{i}\right) c_{i}+U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{i}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{i}\right) c_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus (A.8) is also true on $\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$. Therefore (A.8) is true on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.
According to Definition 3.3.1, the mild solution of system (A.7) is given by

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k},
$$

where $x(0)=x_{0}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
If $x(t)$ is $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (A.7), then we have $x\left(T_{0}\right)=x(0)$; namely,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x(0)=\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \tag{3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

We consider in 2 cases.
Case 1: $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}$ exists.
Theorem 3.3.3. If system (A.5) has only trivial solution, then system (A.7) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{T_{0}}(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s  \tag{3.22}\\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} .
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. Suppose that system (A.5) has only trivial solution, then $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}$ exists. This implies that (A.16) gives

$$
x(0)=\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right) .
$$

Substituting $x(0)=x_{0}$ into equation (A.10), we get

$$
\begin{align*}
x(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s  \tag{3.23}\\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} .
\end{align*}
$$

which is a mild solution of system (A.7).
Next, we want to show that a mild solution is unique and is $T_{0}$-periodic. Suppose that $y(t)=x\left(t+T_{0}\right)$ is a mild solution of system (A.7). By Proposition (3.2.1), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
y(t)= & x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=U\left(t+T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t+T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t+T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U\left(t+T_{0}, T_{0}\right) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
& +\int_{T_{0}}^{t+T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{T_{0} \leq \tau_{k}<t+T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, T_{0}\right) U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, T_{0}\right) U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+U(t, 0) \int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+U(t, 0) \sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0)\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right] \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =U(t, 0) x\left(T_{0}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
& =U(t, 0) y(0)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies that $y(t)$ is also a solution. It follows from Lemma A. 5 that $y(t)=x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$. So $x(t)$ is a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (A.7), which is exactly (3.22). This completes the proof.

Case 2: $\left.2 I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}$ does not exists.
In this case, system (A.5) has nontrivial periodic mild solutions. Let us construct the following adjoint equation of system (A.5),

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
& \dot{y}(t)=-A^{*} y,  \tag{3.24}\\
&-\Delta y(t)=B_{k}^{*} y(t), \\
& t=\tau_{k} \\
&
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $A^{*}$ is the adjoint operator of $A, 0=\tau_{0}<\tau_{1}<\ldots<\tau_{k}<\ldots<\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}$ and $\Delta y\left(\tau_{k}\right)=y\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-y\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$. Suppose that system (A.19) satisfies the following assumption (A3).

## Assumption (A3) ;

(A3.1) $A^{*}$ is the infinitesimal generator of the adjoint semigroup $\left\{T^{*}(t), t \geq 0\right\}$ in $X^{*}$.
(A3.2) $\quad B_{k}^{*} \in \mathcal{L}\left(X^{*}\right)$ such that $B_{k+\sigma}^{*}=B_{k}^{*}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

Definition 3.3.4. A function $y \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is said to be a periodic mild solution of system (A.19) with initial condition $y\left(T_{0}\right)=y(0)$ if $y$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
y(t)=U^{*}\left(T_{0}, t\right) y(0), \quad 0 \leq t \leq T_{0} \tag{3.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
U^{*}\left(T_{0}, t\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{c}
\tau_{\sigma-1}<t \leq \tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}  \tag{3.26}\\
T^{*}\left(T_{0}-t\right), \\
\left.T_{i}-t\right)\left(I+B_{i}^{*}\right)\left[\prod_{j=i+1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right]^{*} T^{*}\left(T_{0}-\tau_{k}\right), \\
0 \leq \tau_{i-1}<t \leq \tau_{i} \leq \tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

for all $\quad i=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$.

Theorem 3.3.4. Assume that (A1) and (A2) hold. Furthermore, assume that $X$ is a Hilbert space and $u \in L_{l o c}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$. If system (A.5) have $m$ linearly independent periodic mild solutions $\quad x^{1}, x^{2}, \ldots, x^{m}$ with $1 \leq m \leq n$ where $x^{i}$ are periodic mild solutions of system (A.5) corresponding to initial conditions $x^{i}(0)=x_{0}^{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, m$, then

1. the adjoint system (A.19) also have $m$ linearly independent periodic mild solutions $y^{1}, y^{2}, \ldots, y^{m}$.
2. system (A.7) has a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle y, z\rangle=0, \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $y \in X^{*}$ satisfying

$$
\begin{gathered}
{\left[I-U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] y=0} \\
\text { and } z:=\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k},
\end{gathered}
$$

or if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\langle y(s), u(s)\rangle d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\langle y\left(\tau_{k}\right), c_{k}\right\rangle=0 . \tag{3.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, let $x_{a}(t)$ be a particular $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (A.7), each $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (A.7) has the form

$$
x(t)=x_{a}(t)+\sum_{i=1}^{m} \alpha_{i} x^{i}(t),
$$

where $\alpha_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, m$, are constants.

Proof. 1. Suppose system (A.5) have $m$ linearly independent periodic mild solutions $x^{1}, x^{2}, \ldots, x^{m}$ with $1 \leq m \leq n$ where $x^{i}$ are periodic mild solutions of system (A.5) corresponding to initial conditions $x^{i}(0)=x_{0}^{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, m$. By Theorem A.3, this means that the equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x_{0}^{i}=0 \tag{3.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

have fixed points $x_{0}^{1}, x_{0}^{2}, \ldots, x_{0}^{m}$. Then from Theorem 2.1.21, we know that the following adjoint equations of (A.25)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] y_{0}^{i}=0, \quad \text { where } \quad y_{0}^{i}=y^{i}(0) \tag{3.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

also have $m$ linearly independent solutions $y_{0}^{1}, y_{0}^{2}, \ldots, y_{0}^{m}$. So $y_{0}^{1}, y_{0}^{2}, \ldots, y_{0}^{m}$ are fixed points of $U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$. Again by Theorem A.3, this means that system (A.19) have periodic mild solutions, say $y^{1}, y^{2}, \ldots, y^{m}$ where $y^{i}$ are periodic mild solutions of system (A.5) corresponding to initial conditions $y^{i}(0)=y_{0}^{i}, i=$ $1,2, \ldots, m$.
2. System (A.7) has a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x(t)$ if and only if the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x(0)=\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}:=z \tag{3.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a solution $x(0)$. It follows from Theorem 2.1.18 that the above condition is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle y, z\rangle=0, \tag{3.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $y \in X^{*}$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] y=0 \tag{3.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

From equation (A.28), we obtain

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
\langle y, z\rangle=0 & \Leftrightarrow \quad\left\langle y, \int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right\rangle=0 \\
& \Leftrightarrow\left\langle y, \int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s\right\rangle+\left\langle y, \sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right\rangle=0 \\
& \Leftrightarrow \int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\langle y, U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s)\right\rangle d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\langle y, U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right\rangle=0 \\
& \Leftrightarrow \int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\langle U^{*}\left(T_{0}, s\right) y, u(s)\right\rangle d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\langle U^{*}\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) y, c_{k}\right\rangle=0 \\
& \Leftrightarrow \int_{0}^{T_{0}}\langle y(s), u(s)\rangle d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\langle y\left(\tau_{k}\right), c_{k}\right\rangle & =0
\end{array}
$$

from which we immediately get (A.24). This completes the proof.

The following theorem guarantee the existence of periodic mild solution. The proof is based on boundedness property.

Theorem 3.3.5. If system (A.7) has a bounded mild solution, then it has at least one $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution.

Proof. Assume that $x(t)$ is a bounded mild solution of system (A.7). For any $t \geq 0$, we have

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k},
$$

where $x(0)=x_{0}$ and

$$
x\left(T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} .
$$

Define $\quad z:=\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}$, then

$$
x\left(T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+z .
$$

We know that the function $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)$ is also a solution of system (A.7) on [ $\left.T_{0}, 2 T_{0}\right]$ for $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and its value at $t=0$ is $x\left(T_{0}\right)$. So

$$
x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x\left(T_{0}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}
$$

and

$$
x\left(2 T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x\left(T_{0}\right)+z=U^{2}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)+I\right] z
$$

Proceeding in this way, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
x\left(m T_{0}\right)=U^{m}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\sum_{i=0}^{m-1} U^{i}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) z \quad \text { for all } m \in \mathbb{N} . \tag{3.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

By contradiction, we assume that (A.7) has no $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution. This means that the periodicity condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
x\left(T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+z=x_{0} \tag{3.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

has no solution, i.e., the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x_{0}=z \tag{3.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

has no solution. By Theorem 2.1.18, this implies that there exists $y \in X^{*}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] y=0 \quad \text { and } \quad\langle y, z\rangle \neq 0 . \tag{3.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

The first condition means that $U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) y=y$, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
U^{*^{m}}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) y=y \quad \text { for all } m \in \mathbb{N} . \tag{3.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assume that $\langle y, z\rangle=\gamma \neq 0$. Then from equation (A.30), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\langle y, x\left(m T_{0}\right)\right\rangle & =\left\langle y, U^{m}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}\right\rangle+\sum_{i=0}^{m-1}\left\langle y, U^{i}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) z\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle U^{*^{m}}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) y, x_{0}\right\rangle+\sum_{i=0}^{m-1}\left\langle U^{*^{i}}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) y, z\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle y, x_{0}\right\rangle+\sum_{i=0}^{m-1}\langle y, z\rangle \\
& =\left\langle y, x_{0}\right\rangle+m \gamma .
\end{aligned}
$$

Letting $m \rightarrow \infty$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty}\left\langle y, x\left(m T_{0}\right)\right\rangle=\infty . \tag{3.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $x(t)$ is bounded mild solution and $y \in X^{*}$, then

$$
\left|\left\langle y, x\left(m T_{0}\right)\right\rangle\right| \leq\|y\|_{x^{*}}\left\|x\left(m T_{0}\right)\right\|_{x} \leq M\|y\|_{X^{*}}<\infty .
$$

But $\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty}\left\langle y, x\left(m T_{0}\right)\right\rangle<\infty$. It contradicts (A.35) and the theorem is proved.

## Corollary 3.3.6.

1. Assume that system (A.7) has no $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution, then all of its solutions are unbounded for $t \geq 0$.
2. Assume that system (A.7) has a unique bounded mild solution for $t \geq 0$, then this solution is $T_{0}$-periodic.

### 3.4 Linear Impulsive Periodic Control Systems with Parameter Perturbations

We consider the following linear impulsive periodic control systems with parameter perturbations

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+u(t)+p(t, x(t), \xi),, & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{3.41}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}+q_{k}(x(t), \xi), & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$. Suppose that system (3.41) satisfy assumptions (A1) and (A2).

We impose the following assumption for the remaining.
Assumption (A4) ;
(A4.1) $p(\cdot, x, \xi) \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ such that $p\left(t+T_{0}, x, \xi\right)=p(t, x, \xi)$ for all

$$
(t, x, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]
$$

(A4.2) $q_{k} \in C\left(\mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right], X\right)$ such that $q_{k+\sigma}(x, \xi)=q_{k}(x, \xi)$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$
(A4.3) For each $(t, x, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, there exists a nonnegative function $\chi(\xi)$ such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\lim _{\xi \rightarrow 0} \chi(\xi)=\chi(0)=0 \\
\text { and } \quad\|p(t, x, \xi)\|_{x} \leq \chi(\xi), \quad\left\|q_{k}(x, \xi)\right\|_{x} \leq \chi(\xi)
\end{gather*}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

### 3.4.1 Definitions of Solutions

Definition 3.4.1. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a mild solution of system (3.41) with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0} \in X$ and the input $u \in L_{l o c}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$ if $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
x(t)= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)[u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s  \tag{3.43}\\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right],
\end{align*}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

Definition 3.4.2. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a periodic mild solution of system (3.41) if it is a mild solution and there exists $T_{0}>0$ such that $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

Definition 3.4.3. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (3.41) if it is a mild solution and $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

From now on, we will find sufficient conditions for the existence of $T_{0}$ periodic mild solutions of system (3.41). We assume that system (A.5) has only
trivial solution. Let $\xi=0$, then system (3.41) has the same form as system (A.7) because of the fact from (3.42) that $p(t, x, 0)=0$ and $q_{k}(x, 0)=0$. It follows from Theorem A. 7 that system (3.41) has the following $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{T_{0}}(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s  \tag{3.44}\\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}
\end{align*}
$$

where $U(t, s)$ is defined in (A.3). Then we have the following theorem to show that for small $\xi$ system (3.41) has a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution which is closed to $x_{T_{0}}(t)$.

### 3.4.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions

Theorem 3.4.1. Let assumptions (A1), (A2) and (A4) hold. Assume that

1. system (A.5) has only trivial solution,
2. the following inequality is valid

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{0}=\sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}<\rho \tag{3.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\rho$ be any positive real number,
3. $p(t, x, \xi)$ and $q_{k}(x, \xi)$ satisfy Lipschitz conditions, i.e. for any $(t, x, \xi)$, $(t, y, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, there exists a constant $N(\xi)>0$ such that

$$
\|p(t, x, \xi)-p(t, y, \xi)\|_{x} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{x}
$$

and

$$
\left\|q_{k}(x, \xi)-q_{k}(y, \xi)\right\|_{X} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{x} .
$$

Then for any constant $\rho>\rho_{0}>0$, there exists a sufficiently small $\xi_{0}>0$ such that for every fixed $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ system (3.41) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild
solution $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}<\rho-\rho_{0} \tag{3.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{\xi \rightarrow 0} x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)=x_{T_{0}}(t) \tag{3.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

uniformly on $t$.

Proof. Let $P C_{T_{0}}([0, \infty), X):=\left\{x \in P C([0, \infty), X) \mid x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t), \forall t \geq 0\right\}$. Moreover, $P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is a Banach space with the norm

$$
\|x\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}=\sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|x(t)\|_{X} .
$$

Let us define

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{B} & :=\mathcal{B}\left(x_{T_{0}}, \rho_{1}\right)=\left\{x \in P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right) \mid\left\|x-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho_{1}:=\rho-\rho_{0}\right\} \\
L_{1} & =\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}  \tag{3.48}\\
L_{2} & =\left\|\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}
\end{align*}
$$

and an operator $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega(x)(t):= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)[u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)[u(s)  \tag{3.49}\\
& +p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] .
\end{align*}
$$

We note that $\Omega(x) \in P C_{T_{0}}([0, \infty), X)$. Since

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Omega(x)\left(T_{0}\right)= & U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)[u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)[u(s), p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= & \left(U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}-I\right)\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)[u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
= & {\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)[u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s\right.} \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right)=\Omega(x)(0) .
\end{aligned}
$$

From (A.37) and (A.40), we know that if $x \in \mathcal{B}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|x\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq\left\|x-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+\left\|x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}=\rho_{1}+\rho_{0}=\rho . \tag{3.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any $x, y \in \mathcal{B}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|\Omega(x)-\Omega(y)\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}= & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \| U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)[p(s, x(s), \xi)-p(s, y(s), \xi)] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)[p(s, x(s), \xi)-p(s, y(s), \xi)] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] \|_{X} \\
\leq & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|U(t, 0)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|p(s, x(s), \xi)-p(s, y(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|p(s, x(s), \xi)-p(s, y(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\leq & L_{1} L_{2}\left(L_{1} T_{0} N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+L_{1} \sigma N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}\right) \\
& +L_{1} T_{0} N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+L_{1} \sigma N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \\
= & \left(L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma\right) N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

So

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\Omega(x)-\Omega(y)\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq L N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}, \tag{3.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\quad L=L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma \quad$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}= & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \| U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right) \|_{X} \\
\leq & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|U(t, 0)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right)\right\|_{X} d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right)\right\|_{X} d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t}\left\|U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X} \\
\leq & L_{1} L_{2}\left(L_{1} T_{0} \chi(\xi)+L_{1} \sigma \chi(\xi)\right)+L_{1} T_{0} \chi(\xi)+L_{1} \sigma \chi(\xi) \\
= & \left(L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma\right) \chi(\xi)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq L \chi(\xi) \tag{3.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\quad L=L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma$.

Let us choose $\xi_{0}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
\eta= & L \sup _{\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]} N(\xi)<1,  \tag{3.53}\\
& L \sup _{\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]} \chi(\xi) \leq \rho_{1}(1-\eta) .
\end{align*}
$$

Assume that $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, then it follows from (A.43), (A.44) and (A.45) that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \|\Omega(x)-\Omega(y)\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \eta\|x-y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}},  \tag{3.54}\\
& \left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho_{1}(1-\eta) .
\end{align*}
$$

This implies that $\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\right) \in \mathcal{B}$ and $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}$ is a contraction mapping. So $\Omega$ has a unique fixed point $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi} \in \mathcal{B}$ and satisfy

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right)  \tag{3.55}\\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)\left[u(s), p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]
\end{align*}
$$

Since

$$
\begin{aligned}
x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(T_{0}\right)= & U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s), p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] \\
= & \left(U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}-I\right)\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= & {\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s\right.} \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
= & x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(0),
\end{aligned}
$$

$x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ is a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (3.41) which satisfies the estimate (A.38) because

$$
\begin{aligned}
x_{T_{0}}^{\xi} \in \mathcal{B} & \Rightarrow\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho_{1} \\
& \Rightarrow \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X} \leq \rho_{1} \\
& \Rightarrow\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X} \leq \rho_{1}=\rho-\rho_{0} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Because we know that $\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\right)(t)=x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ for all $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.
Then $\quad\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}=\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\right)(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X} \leq L \chi(\xi)$.
Letting $\xi \rightarrow 0$, we obtain (A.39). This completes the proof.

The following definition and lemma will be used in the proof of Theorem A.13.

Definition 3.4.4. A set $\mathcal{S} \subset P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is quasiequicontinuous in $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ if for any $\delta>0$ there exists $\varepsilon>0$ such that if $x \in \mathcal{S}, t_{1}, t_{2} \in\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right] \cap\left[0, T_{0}\right], k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\left|t_{1}-t_{2}\right|<\varepsilon$, then $\left\|x\left(t_{1}\right)-x\left(t_{2}\right)\right\|_{X}<\delta$.

Lemma 3.4.2. A set $\mathcal{S} \subset P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is relatively compact if and only if

1. $\mathcal{S}$ is bounded for each $x \in \mathcal{S}$,
2. $\mathcal{S}$ is quasiequicontinuous in $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.

Proof. The proof can be found in D.D. Bainov and P.S. Simeonov (1993).

Theorem 3.4.3. Let assumptions (A1), (A2) and (A4) hold. Assume that

1. system (A.5) has only trivial solution,
2. the following inequality is valid

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{0}=\sup _{t \in[0, \infty]}\left\|x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}<\rho \tag{3.56}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then for any constant $\rho>\rho_{0}>0$, there exists a sufficiently small $\xi_{0}>0$ such that for every fixed $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ system (3.41) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X} \leq \rho-\rho_{0} . \tag{3.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. As in the proof of Theorem A.11, we determine the number $\rho_{1}=\rho-\rho_{0}$, the Banach space $P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$, the set $\mathcal{B}:=\mathcal{B}\left(x_{T_{0}} ; \rho_{1}\right)$ and the operator $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is defined in (A.41). Obviously, $\mathcal{B}$ is a non-empty bounded closed and convex set. It follows from the condition in (A.42) that if $x \in \mathcal{B}$, then $\|x\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho$. For any $x \in \mathcal{B}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\Omega(x)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}= & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \| U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) p(s, x(s), \xi) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) p(s, x(s), \xi) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right) \|_{X}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\leq & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|U(t, 0)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\|U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X} \\
\leq & \left(L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma\right) \chi(\xi) .
\end{aligned}
$$

So

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Omega(x)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P_{C_{0}}} \leq L \chi(\xi) . \tag{3.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\quad L=L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma$.
Let us choose $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
L \sup _{\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]} \chi(\xi) \leq \rho_{1} . \tag{3.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then for $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Omega(x)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq L \chi(\xi) \leq \rho_{1} \tag{3.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

From which we know that $\Omega(x) \in \mathcal{B}$ and therefore $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}$.
Next, we want show that $\Omega$ satisfies the assumptions of Corollary 2.1.12.

1) The map $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}$ is a continuous.

Let $\left\{x_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence such that $x_{n} \rightarrow x$ as $n \rightarrow \infty \quad$ in $\mathcal{B}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\Omega\left(x_{n}\right)-\Omega(x)\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}= & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \| U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[p\left(s, x_{n}(s), \xi\right)-p(s, x(s), \xi)\right] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[q_{k}\left(x_{n}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)\left[p\left(s, x_{n}(s), \xi\right)-p(s, x(s), \xi)\right] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[q_{k}\left(x_{n}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] \|_{x} \\
& \leq \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|U(t, 0)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\|U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X} \\
& \leq \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left(\|U(t, 0)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\right. \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|p\left(s, x_{n}(s), \xi\right)-p(s, x(s), \xi)\right\|_{X} d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x_{n}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|p\left(s, x_{n}(s), \xi\right)-p(s, x(s), \xi)\right\|_{X} d s \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|q_{k}\left(x_{n}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) \\
& \leq L_{1} L_{2}\left(L_{1} T_{0} N(\xi)\left\|x_{n}-x\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+L_{1} \sigma N(\xi)\left\|x_{n}-x\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}\right) \\
& +L_{1} T_{0} N(\xi)\left\|x_{n}-x\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+L_{1} \sigma N(\xi)\left\|x_{n}-x\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \\
& =\left(L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma\right) N(\xi)\left\|x_{n}-x\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}},
\end{aligned}
$$

which tends to zero as $n \rightarrow \infty$.
2) $\Omega(\mathcal{B})$ is uniformly bounded

By assumption and equation (A.52),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\Omega(x)\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq\left\|\Omega(x)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+\left\|x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho_{1}+\rho_{0}=\rho, \tag{3.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

from which we know that $\Omega(\mathcal{B})$ is uniformly bounded.
3) $\Omega(\mathcal{B})$ is quasiequicontinuous in $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.

Let $x \in \mathcal{B}_{\rho}$ and $t_{1}, t_{2} \in\left(\tau_{i-1}, \tau_{i}\right] \cap\left[0, T_{0}\right], i=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$, where $\tau_{0}=0$ and $\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}$. For $0<\varepsilon<t_{1}<t_{2} \leq T_{0}$, then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|(\Omega x)\left(t_{1}\right)-(\Omega x)\left(t_{2}\right)\right\|_{X} \leq & \left\|U\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-U\left(t_{2}, 0\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t_{1}-\epsilon}\left\|U\left(t_{1}, s\right)-U\left(t_{2}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s \\
& +\int_{t_{1}-\epsilon}^{t_{1}}\left\|U\left(t_{1}, s\right)-U\left(t_{2}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s \\
& +\int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}}\left\|U\left(t_{2}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t}\left\|U\left(t_{1}, \tau_{k}\right)-U\left(t_{2}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X},
\end{aligned}
$$

from which we know that for any $\delta>0$, there exists $\varepsilon>0$ such that if $t_{1}-t_{2}<\varepsilon$, then $\left\|(\Omega x)\left(t_{1}\right)-(\Omega x)\left(t_{2}\right)\right\|_{X}<\delta$. Thus $\Omega(\mathcal{B})$ is quasiequicontinuous.

From Lemma A.12, we know that the following set

$$
\mathcal{S}=\{y \in \mathcal{B} \mid y=\Omega(x), x \in \mathcal{B}\} .
$$

is relatively compact in $P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$. Applying Corollary 2.1.12, it follows that the operator $\Omega$ has a fixed point $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi} \in \mathcal{B}$ and satisfy

$$
\begin{aligned}
x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)\left[u(s), p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since

$$
\begin{aligned}
x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(T_{0}\right)= & U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s), p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] \\
= & \left(U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}-I\right)\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
= & {\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s\right.} \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
= & x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(0),
\end{aligned}
$$

$x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ is a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (3.41). This completes the proof.

## CHAPTER IV

## SEMILINEAR PERIODIC SYSTEMS WITH IMPULSES

In this chapter, we study the existence and uniqueness of periodic mild solution of semilinear impulsive periodic systems, semilinear impulsive periodic control systems and semilinear impulsive periodic control systems with parameter perturbations.

### 4.1 Semiliner Impulsive Periodic Systems

We consider the following semilinear impulsive periodic systems

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+f(t, x(t)), & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{4.1}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t), & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\quad \Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$. Furthermore, we suppose that $A$ is infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$.

In addition to assumption (A1), we introduce the following assumption.
Assumption (A5) ;
(A5) $f:[0, \infty) \times X \rightarrow X$ is an operator such that $f\left(t+T_{0}, x\right)=f(t, x)$ and $t \mapsto f(t, x)$ is strongly measurable. For every $\rho>0$, there exist constants $K_{1}(\rho), K_{2}(\rho)>0$ such that

$$
\|f(t, x)\|_{x} \leq K_{1}(\rho)
$$

and

$$
\|f(t, x)-f(t, y)\|_{X} \leq K_{2}(\rho)\|x-y\|_{X}
$$

for all $t \geq 0$ and all $x, y \in X$ such that $\|x\|_{x},\|y\|_{x} \leq \rho$.

### 4.1.1 Definitions of Solutions

Definition 4.1.1. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a mild solution of system (4.1) with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0} \in X$ if $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) f(s, x(s)) d s \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Definition 4.1.2. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty) ; X)$ is said to be a periodic mild solution of system (4.1) if it is a mild solution and there exists $T_{0}>0$ such that $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

Definition 4.1.3. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty) ; X)$ is said to be a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (4.1) if it is a mild solution and $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

### 4.1.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions

At first, we consider the following semilinear system without impulses,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t))  \tag{4.3}\\
x(0)=x_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $A$ is the infinitesimal generator a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$ and $f:[0, \infty) \times X \rightarrow X$.

Definition 4.1.4. A function $x \in C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is said to be a mild solution of system (4.3) if $x$ is given by

$$
x(t)=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) f(s, x(s)) d s
$$

Theorem 4.1.1. Suppose (a1) $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$, (a2) $f:[0, \infty) \times X \rightarrow X$ is continuous and map a bounded set of $[0, \infty) \times X$ into a bounded set of $X$. Then for every $x_{0} \in X$ system
(4.3) has a mild solution $x \in C\left(\left[0, t_{\max }\right), X\right)$, where $\left[0, t_{\max }\right)$ is a maximal interval solution of existence. Further, if $t_{\max }<\infty$, then $\lim _{t \rightarrow t_{\max }}\|x(t)\|_{X}=\infty$.

Proof. Let $T_{0} \in(0, \infty)$. For any $\tau^{\prime}>0, \rho>0$ be such that

$$
\mathcal{B}_{\rho}\left(x_{0}\right):=\left\{x \in X \mid\left\|x-x_{0}\right\|_{X} \leq \rho\right\} .
$$

Then there exists a constant $N>0$ such that $\|f(t, x)\|_{X} \leq N$ for $0 \leq t \leq \tau^{\prime}$ and $x \in \mathcal{B}_{\rho}\left(x_{0}\right)$. Clearly, due to the strong continuous of $C_{0}$-semigroup of $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$, there exists $\tau^{\prime \prime}>0$ such that

$$
\left\|T(t) x_{0}-x_{0}\right\|_{X}<\frac{\rho}{2}, \quad \text { for } \quad t \in\left[0, \tau^{\prime \prime}\right]
$$

Let $\quad M=\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}}\|T(t-s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}$ and define

$$
Y_{\rho}:=\left\{x \in C\left(\left[0, t_{1}\right], X\right) \mid x(t) \in \mathcal{B}_{\rho}\left(x_{0}\right), t \in\left[0, t_{1}\right]\right\}
$$

where $t_{1}=\min \left\{\tau^{\prime}, \tau^{\prime \prime}, T_{0}, \frac{\rho}{2 M N}\right\}$. Then $Y_{\rho}$ is a closed bounded convex subset of $Y=C\left(\left[0, t_{1}\right], X\right)$. We define a mapping $F: Y \rightarrow Y_{\rho}$ as follow,

$$
\begin{equation*}
(F x)(t)=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) f(s, x(s)) d s \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|(F x)(t)-x_{0}\right\|_{X} & \leq\left\|T(t) x_{0}-x_{0}\right\|_{X}+\int_{0}^{t}\|T(t-s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|f(s, x(s))\|_{X} d s \\
& \leq \frac{\rho}{2}+t M N \leq \rho
\end{aligned}
$$

so $F Y_{\rho} \subseteq Y_{\rho}$. Next, we want to show that $F$ has a fixed point. According to Schauder's fixed point theorem, first we want to show that $F: Y_{\rho} \rightarrow Y_{\rho}$ is continuous. Let $\left\{x_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence such that $x_{n} \rightarrow x$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$ in $Y_{\rho}$. Then, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\left(F x_{n}\right)(t)-(F x)(t)\right\|_{X} & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|T(t-s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|f\left(s, x_{n}(s)\right)-f(s, x(s))\right\|_{X} d s \\
& \leq M \int_{0}^{t}\left\|f\left(s, x_{n}(s)\right)-f(s, x(s))\right\|_{X} d s \tag{4.5}
\end{align*}
$$

By continuity of $f$, we obtain the right hand side of (4.5) tends to zero as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Thus, $F$ is continuous.

Moreover, $F Y_{\rho}$ is a relatively compact subset of $Y_{\rho}$. By Ascoli-Arzela theorem states that a subset $W \subseteq C(I, X)$ is relatively compact if and only if
(a) its $t$-section $W(t)=\{(F x)(t) \mid x \in W\}$ is relatively compact subset of $X$,
(b) the set $W$ is equicontinuous.

Define $\quad W=F Y_{\rho} \quad$ and $\quad W(t)=\left\{(F x)(t) \mid x \in Y_{\rho}\right\} \quad$ for $\quad t \in\left[0, t_{1}\right]$.
Clearly, $W(0)=\left\{x_{0}\right\}$ is compact. Let $0<t \leq t_{1}$ be fixed and let $0<\varepsilon<t$. For $x \in Y_{\rho}$, we define

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(F_{\varepsilon} x\right)(t) & =T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t-\varepsilon} T(t-s) f(s, x(s)) d s \\
& =T(t) x_{0}+T(\varepsilon) \int_{0}^{t-\varepsilon} T(t-s-\varepsilon) f(s, x(s)) d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $T(t)$ is a compact operator, the set $W_{\varepsilon}(t)=\left\{\left(F_{\varepsilon} x\right)(t) \mid x \in Y_{\rho}\right\}$ is relatively compact in $X$ for every $\varepsilon, 0<\varepsilon<t$. Furthermore, for $x \in Y_{\rho}$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sup _{x \in Y_{\rho}}\left\|(F x)(t)-\left(F_{\varepsilon} x\right)(t)\right\|_{X} & \leq \sup _{x \in Y_{\rho}}\left\|\int_{t-\varepsilon}^{t} T(t-s) f(s, x(s)) d s\right\|_{X} \\
& \leq \varepsilon M N .
\end{aligned}
$$

This shows that the set $W(t)$ can be approximated to an arbitrary degree of accuracy by a relatively compact set. Hence $W(t)$ itself is relatively compact. For equicontinuity, we note that for $0<z_{1}<z_{2} \leq t$ and $x \in Y_{\rho}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|(F x)\left(z_{1}\right)-(F x)\left(z_{2}\right)\right\|_{X} \leq & \left\|T\left(z_{1}\right)-T\left(z_{2}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X} \\
& +\int_{0}^{z_{1}}\left\|T\left(z_{1}-s\right)-T\left(z_{2}-s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|f(s, x(s))\|_{X} d s \\
& +\int_{z_{1}}^{z_{2}}\left\|T\left(z_{2}-s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|f(s, x(s))\|_{X} d s \\
\leq & \left\|T\left(z_{1}\right)-T\left(z_{2}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X} \\
& +N \int_{0}^{z_{1}}\left\|T\left(z_{1}-s\right)-T\left(z_{2}-s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} d s \\
& +M N\left(z_{2}-z_{1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

from which we know that for any $\delta>0$, there exists $\varepsilon>0$ such that if $\left|z_{1}-z_{2}\right|<\varepsilon$, then $\left\|(F x)\left(z_{1}\right)-(F x)\left(z_{2}\right)\right\|_{X}<\delta$. Therefore, $W$ is equicontinuous. This implies that $F Y_{\rho}$ is a relatively compact subset of $Y_{\rho}$ and hence $F$ has a fixed point in $Y_{\rho}$ which is a mild solution of system (4.3) on $\left[0, t_{1}\right]$.

We note that a mild solution $x$ of system (4.3) defined on a closed interval $\left[0, t_{1}\right]$ can be extended to a larger interval $\left[0, t_{1}+\delta\right], \delta>0$, by defining $y(t)=$ $x\left(t_{1}+t\right)$ where $y(t)$ is a mild solution of the following system

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{y}(t)=A y(t)+f(t, y(t))  \tag{4.6}\\
y(0)=x\left(t_{1}\right)
\end{array}\right.
$$

The existence of positive constant $\delta>0$ is guarantee by the above assertion. Repeating this procedure, one continues the solution till time $t_{\max }$ where $\left[0, t_{\max }\right)$ is the maximal interval of existence of mild solution. Thus system (4.3) has a unique solution $x \in C\left(\left[0, t_{\max }\right), X\right)$. If $t_{\max }<\infty$, then $\lim _{t \rightarrow t_{\max }}\|x(t)\|_{X}=\infty$. If not, there exists a sequence $\left\{t_{n}\right\}$ such that $t_{n} \rightarrow t_{\max }$ and $\left\|x\left(t_{n}\right)\right\|_{x} \leq \beta$ for all $n$. Taking $n$ sufficiently large, so that $\left\{t_{n}\right\}$ near enough to $t_{\max }$, one can use the previous arguments to extend the solution beyond $t_{\text {max }}$ which is a contradiction to the definition of $t_{\max }$. This proves the theorem.

Remark 4.1. It is not difficult to see that Theorem 4.1.1 holds if $T_{0}=\infty$.

Corollary 4.1.2. Suppose assumptions of Theorem 4.1.1 hold. If there exists a constant $\beta>0$ such that $\|x(t)\|_{X} \leq \beta$ hold for every mild solution $x$. Then system (4.3) has a global mild solution $x \in C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$.

Theorem 4.1.3. Suppose $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$. If assumptions (A1) and (A5) hold, then system (4.1) has a unique mild solution $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$.

Proof. For $t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$, Theorem 4.1.1 implies that system

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t)), \quad 0<t \leq \tau_{1}, \quad x(0)=x_{0} \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a mild solution on $I_{1}=\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$ which satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}(t)=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) f\left(s, x_{1}(s)\right) d s, \quad t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right] . \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, define

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right)=T\left(\tau_{1}\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{1}} T\left(\tau_{1}-s\right) f\left(s, x_{1}(s)\right) d s \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $x_{1}(\cdot)$ is left continuous at $\tau_{1}$.
Next, on $I_{2}=\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$, consider system

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t)), \quad \tau_{1}<t<\tau_{2}, \quad x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}^{+}\right)=\left(I+B_{1}\right) x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right), \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $x_{1} \in X$, we can use Theorem 4.1.1 again to get a mild solution on $\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$ which satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{2}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{1}\right) x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}^{+}\right)+\int_{\tau_{1}}^{t} T(t-s) f\left(s, x_{2}(s)\right) d s \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, define $x_{2}\left(\tau_{2}\right)$ accordingly so that $x_{2}(\cdot)$ is left continuous at $\tau_{2}$. It is easy to see that Theorem 4.1.1 can be applied to interval $\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$ to verify that $x_{2}\left(\tau_{2}\right) \in$ $X$. Repeat the procedure above, use step-by-step approach on intervals $I_{k}=$ $\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right], k=3,4, \ldots, \sigma\left(\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}\right)$ to get a mild solutions

$$
x_{k}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k-1}\right) x_{k-1}\left(\tau_{k-1}^{+}\right)+\int_{\tau_{k-1}}^{t} T(t-s) f\left(s, x_{k}(s)\right) d s
$$

for $t \in\left(\tau_{k-}, \tau_{k}\right]$ and define $x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right)$ accordingly with $x_{k}(\cdot)$ left continuous at $\tau_{k}$ and $x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right) \in X, k=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$.

Thus we obtain $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is a mild solution of system (4.1) and given by

$$
x(t)= \begin{cases}x_{1}(t), & 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}, \\ x_{k}(t), & \tau_{k-1}<t \leq \tau_{k}, k=2,3, \ldots, \sigma\end{cases}
$$

Next, by mathematical induction we can show that (4.2) is satisfied on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. First, (4.2) is satisfied on $\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$. If (4.2) is satisfied on $\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right]$, then for $t \in$ $\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
x(t)= & x_{k+1}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s) f\left(s, x_{k+1}(s)\right) d s \\
= & T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right) x\left(\tau_{k}\right)+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s) f\left(s, x_{k+1}(s)\right) d s \\
= & T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right)\left[U\left(\tau_{k}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{k}} U\left(\tau_{k}, s\right) f(s, x(s)) d s\right] \\
& +\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s) f\left(s, x_{k+1}(s)\right) d s \\
= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{k}} U(t, s) f(s, x(s)) d s+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} U(t, s) f(s, x(s)) d s \\
= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) f(s, x(s)) d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus (4.2) is also true on $\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$. Therefore (4.2) is true on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.
Next, we want to show that a mild solution is unique on $P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$. Suppose that $x, y$ are mild solutions of system (4.1) on $P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$. Then by Corollary 3.2.4, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|x(t)-y(t)\|_{X} & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|f(s, x(s))-f(s, y(s))\|_{X} d s \\
& \leq K e^{\nu t} \int_{0}^{t} e^{-\nu s}\|x(s)-y(s)\|_{X} d s
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows from Gronwall Lemma, we obtain $\|x(t)-y(t)\|=0$ for all $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. That is, $x=y$. Therefore, system (4.1) has a unique mild solution. This completes the proof.

We consider the following system,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t)), \quad t \geq 0  \tag{4.12}\\
x(0)=x_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

and we suppose that it has a global mild solution $x(t)$.

We also consider the following system,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{y}(t)=A y(t)+f(t, x(t)), \quad t \geq 0  \tag{4.13}\\
y(0)=x(0)
\end{array}\right.
$$

By Lemma A.5, system (4.13) has a unique mild solution $y(t)$.
Let $P: C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right) \rightarrow X$ be the Poincar mapping, defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
P x=y\left(T_{0}\right) \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, we consider the following system,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t)), \quad t \geq 0  \tag{4.15}\\
x(0)=P x
\end{array}\right.
$$

which by Lemma A. 5 also has a unique mild solution $x(t)$.
Let $Q: C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right) \rightarrow C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ be a mapping defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q x=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) f(s, x(s)) d s \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We are now in a position to state and prove the basic tool for the proof existence of periodic mild solution.

Theorem 4.1.4. System (4.12) has a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution if and only if the mapping $Q$ has a fixed point.

Proof. Let $x$ be a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (4.12). Then $x$ is clearly a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (4.13). Since $x$ is $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution, $x(0)=x\left(T_{0}\right)$. Therefore $x(0)=x\left(T_{0}\right)=P x$, where $x$ satisfy (4.15) and so $Q x=$ $x$. Conversely, let $x$ be a fixed point of $Q$. By definition, $x$ satisfies (4.13) and since $x(0)=y(0)$. By Lemma A. 5 , show that $x(t) \equiv y(t)$ and hence $x\left(T_{0}\right)=y\left(T_{0}\right)$. Since $Q x=x$, it follows from (4.15) that $x(0)=P x=y\left(T_{0}\right)=x\left(T_{0}\right)$. That is, $x(0)=x\left(T_{0}\right)$. The function $\psi(t):=x\left(t+T_{0}\right)$ is also a mild solution of (4.12).

Since $f$ is $T_{0}$-periodic, $\dot{\psi}(t)=\dot{x}\left(t+T_{0}\right)=A x\left(t+T_{0}\right)+f\left(t+T_{0}, x\left(t+T_{0}\right)\right)=$ $A \psi(t)+f(t, \psi(t))$. Therefore $x(t)=x\left(t+T_{0}\right)$ for all $t \geq 0$. i.e., system (4.12) has a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution. This completes the proof.

Theorem 4.1.5. If assumptions (A1) and (A5) hold, then system (4.1) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ and there exists a constant $\beta>0$ such that

$$
\|x\|_{P C} \leq \beta
$$

Proof. Consider the following semilinear system without impulses,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t)), \quad t \in \gamma  \tag{4.17}\\
x(\tau)=\varphi, \quad \varphi \in X
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\gamma$ is any subinterval of $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and $\tau$ is the left end point of $\gamma$.
Define $B=\{y \mid y \in C(\gamma, X), y(\tau)=\varphi\}$ and a mapping $F: B \rightarrow B$ by $y=F x$, where $y$ is a mild solution of the following system,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{y}(t)=A y(t)+f(t, x(t)), \quad t \in \gamma  \tag{4.18}\\
y(\tau)=\varphi
\end{array}\right.
$$

Similar to the proof Theorem 4.1.1, we can show that $F$ is continuous and compact on $B$. Next, we want to show that there is a constant $\beta_{1}>0$ such that

$$
\|x\|_{C(\gamma, X)} \leq \beta_{1}
$$

for all $x \in B$ and $\lambda \in[0,1]$ satisfying $x=\lambda F x$.
Let $x \in C(\gamma, X)$. We consider the operator equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=\lambda F x, \quad \lambda \in[0,1] . \tag{4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $x$ is a mild solution of equation (4.19), then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|x(t)\|_{X} & \leq \lambda\|T(t)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+\lambda \int_{0}^{t}\|T(t-s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|f(s, x(s))\|_{X} d s \\
& \leq \lambda M_{1}\left(\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+K_{1} T_{0}\right) \\
& \leq M_{1}\left(\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+K_{1} T_{0}\right):=\beta_{1}, \quad \lambda \in[0,1],
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
M_{1}=\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}}\|T(t-s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \text { and }\|f(t, x)\|_{X} \leq K_{1} .
$$

That is, there exists a constant $\beta_{1}>0$ such that $\|x\|_{C(\gamma, X)} \leq \beta_{1}$ for all $x \in B$ and $x=\lambda F x$ where $\lambda \in[0,1]$. This shows that all mild solutions of (4.19) are bounded independently of $\lambda \in[0,1]$. By Leray-Schauder's fixed point theorem, $F$ has a fixed point $x \in C(\gamma, X)$ which is a mild solution of system (4.17).

Next, we must show that a mild solution is unique on $C(\gamma, X)$. Suppose that $x, y$ are mild solutions of system (4.17) on $C(\gamma, X)$. By Theorem 2.3.2(1), there exist constants $K \geq 1$ and $\omega \geq 0$ such that $\|T(t)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq K e^{\omega t}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|x(t)-y(t)\|_{X} & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|T(t-s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|f(s, x(s))-f(s, y(s))\|_{X} d s \\
& \leq K e^{\omega t} \int_{0}^{t} e^{-\omega s}\|x(s)-y(s)\|_{X} d s
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows from Gronwall Lemma, we obtain $\|x(t)-y(t)\|=0$ for all $t \in \gamma$.
That is, $x=y$. Therefore, system (4.17) has a unique mild solution. Further by Theorem 4.1.4 which implies that a mild solution is $T_{0}$-periodic.

Now we consider the partition of interval $I=\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. We define $\gamma_{k}=$ $\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right], k=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$, where $\tau_{0}=0$ and $\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}$. Consider any arbitrary interval, say, $\gamma_{k}$ and $x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)=\left(I+B_{k}\right) x\left(\tau_{k}\right) \in X$. By Theorem 4.1.1 and similar procedure of Theorem A. 6 , we obtain $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is a unique mild solution
of system (4.1) and given by

$$
x(t)= \begin{cases}x_{1}(t), & 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}, \\ x_{k}(t), & \tau_{k-1}<t \leq \tau_{k}, k=2,3, \ldots, \sigma\end{cases}
$$

$x$ is just $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (4.1). By assumption (A5), one can verify the priori estimate of solution of system (4.1) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|x(t)\|_{X} & \leq\|U(t, 0)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+\int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|f(s, x(s))\|_{X} d s \\
& \leq M\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+M K_{1} T_{0}:=\beta
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\quad M=\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}$ and $\|f(t, x)\|_{X} \leq K_{1}$.
That is, there exists a constant $\beta>0$ such that $\|x\|_{P C} \leq \beta$.

### 4.2 Semilinear Impulsive Periodic Control Systems

We consider the following semilinear impulsive periodic control systems

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+f(t, x(t))+u(t), & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{4.20}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}, & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\quad \Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$. Suppose that system (4.20) satisfy the assumptions (A1), (A2) and (A5).

### 4.2.1 Definitions of Solutions

Definition 4.2.1. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a mild solution of impulsive system (4.20) with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0} \in X$ if $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)[f(s, x(s))+u(s)] d s+\sum_{0<\tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Definition 4.2.2. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty) ; X)$ is said to be a periodic mild solution of system (4.20) if it is a mild solution and there exists $T_{0}>0$ such that $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

Definition 4.2.3. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty) ; X)$ is said to be a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (4.20) if it is a mild solution and $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

### 4.2.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions

At first, we consider the following semilinear systems without impulses

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t))+u(t)  \tag{4.22}\\
x(0)=x_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $A$ is the infinitesimal generator a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$, $f:[0, \infty) \times X \rightarrow X$ and $u:[0, \infty) \rightarrow X$.

Definition 4.2.4. A function $x \in C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is said to be a mild solution of system (4.22) if $x$ is given by

$$
x(t)=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s)[f(s, x(s))+u(s)] d s
$$

Theorem 4.2.1. Suppose (a1) $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$, (a2) $f:[0, \infty) \times X \rightarrow X$ is continuous and map a bounded set of $[0, \infty) \times X$ into a bounded set of $X$ and (a3) $u:[0, \infty) \rightarrow X$ is continuous and map a bounded set of $[0, \infty)$ into a bounded set of X. Then for every $x_{0} \in X$ system (4.22) has a mild solution $x \in C\left(\left[0, t_{\max }\right), X\right)$, where $\left[0, t_{\max }\right)$ is a maximal interval solution of existence. Further, if $t_{\max }<\infty$, then $\lim _{t \rightarrow t_{\max }}\|x(t)\|_{X}=\infty$.

Proof. Similar to the proof of Theorem 4.1.1.

Theorem 4.2.2. Suppose $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$. If assumptions (A1), (A2) and (A5) hold, then system (4.20) has a unique mild solution on $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$.

Proof. For $t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$, Theorem 4.2.1 implies that system

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t))+u(t), \quad 0<t \leq \tau_{1}  \tag{4.23}\\
x(0)=x_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

has a mild solution on $I_{1}=\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$ which satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}(t)=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s)\left[f\left(s, x_{1}(s)\right)+u(s)\right] d s, \quad t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right] . \tag{4.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, define

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right)=T\left(\tau_{1}\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{1}} T\left(\tau_{1}-s\right)\left[f\left(s, x_{1}(s)\right)+u(s)\right] d s \tag{4.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $x_{1}(\cdot)$ is left continuous at $\tau_{1}$.
Next, on $I_{2}=\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$, consider system

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t))+u(t), \quad \tau_{1}<t<\tau_{2}  \tag{4.26}\\
x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}^{+}\right)=\left(I+B_{1}\right) x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right)+c_{1}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Since $x_{1} \in X$, we can use Theorem 4.2.1 again to get a mild solution on $\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$ which satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{2}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{1}\right) x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}^{+}\right)+\int_{\tau_{1}}^{t}\left[T(t-s) f\left(s, x_{2}(s)\right)+u(s)\right] d s \tag{4.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, define $x_{2}\left(\tau_{2}\right)$ accordingly so that $x_{2}(\cdot)$ is left continuous at $\tau_{2}$. It is easy to see that Theorem 4.2.1 can be applied to interval $\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$ to verify that $x_{2}\left(\tau_{2}\right) \in$ X. Repeat the procedure above, use step-by-step approach on intervals $I_{k}=$ $\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right], k=3,4, \ldots, \sigma\left(\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}\right)$ to get a mild solutions

$$
x_{k}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k-1}\right) x_{k-1}\left(\tau_{k-1}^{+}\right)+\int_{\tau_{k-1}}^{t}\left[T(t-s) f\left(s, x_{k}(s)\right)+u(s)\right] d s
$$

for $t \in\left(\tau_{k-}, \tau_{k}\right]$ and define $x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right)$ accordingly with $x_{k}(\cdot)$ left continuous at $\tau_{k}$ and $x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right) \in X, k=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$.

Thus we obtain $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is a mild solution of system (4.20) and given by.

$$
x(t)= \begin{cases}x_{1}(t), & 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}, \\ x_{k}(t), & \tau_{k-1}<t \leq \tau_{k}, k=2,3, \ldots, \sigma .\end{cases}
$$

Next, by mathematical induction to show that (4.33) is satisfied on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. First, (4.33) is satisfied on $\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$. If (4.33) is satisfied on $\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right]$, then for $t \in\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
x(t)= & x_{k+1}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s)\left[f\left(s, x_{k+1}(s)\right)+u(s)\right] d s \\
= & T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\left(I+B_{k}\right) x\left(\tau_{k}\right)+c_{k}\right]+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s)\left[f\left(s, x_{k+1}(s)\right)+u(s)\right] d s \\
= & T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right)\left[U\left(\tau_{k}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{k}} U\left(\tau_{k}, s\right)[f(s, x(s))+u(s)] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0<\tau_{i}<\tau_{k}} T\left(\tau_{k}-\tau_{i}\right) c_{i}\right]+T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) c_{k}+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s)\left[f\left(s, x_{k+1}(s)\right)+u(s)\right] d s \\
= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{k}} U(t, s)[f(s, x(s))+u(s)] d s+\sum_{0<\tau_{i}<\tau_{k}} U\left(t, \tau_{i}\right) c_{i} \\
& U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} U(t, s)[f(s, x(s))+u(s)] d s \\
= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) f(s, x(s)) d s+\sum_{0<\tau_{i}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{i}\right) c_{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus (4.33) is also true on $\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$. Therefore (4.33) is true on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.
Next, we want to show that a mild solution is unique on $P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$. Suppose that $x, y$ are mild solutions of system (4.20) on $P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$. Then by Corollary 3.2.4, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|x(t)-y(t)\|_{X} & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|f(s, x(s))-f(s, y(s))\|_{X} d s \\
& \leq K e^{\nu t} \int_{0}^{t} e^{-\nu s}\|x(s)-y(s)\|_{X} d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows from Gronwall Lemma, we obtain $\|x(t)-y(t)\|=0$ for all $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. That is, $x=y$. Therefore, system (4.20) has a unique mild solution. This completes the proof.

To study the semilinear impulsive periodic control systems (4.20), define the operator $\Omega: C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right) \rightarrow C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega x=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s)[f(s, x(s))+u(s)] d s \tag{4.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Analogous to Theorem 4.1.4, system (4.22) has a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution if and only if the following operator equation has a fixed points

$$
x=\Omega x .
$$

Theorem 4.2.3. If assumptions (A1), (A2) and (A5) hold, then system (4.20) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ and there exists a constant $\beta>0$ such that

$$
\|x\|_{P C} \leq \beta
$$

Proof. Consider the following semilinear control system without impulses,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+f(t, x(t))+u(t), \quad t \in \gamma  \tag{4.29}\\
x(\tau)=\varphi, \quad \varphi \in X
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\gamma$ is any subinterval of $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and $\tau$ is the left end point of $\gamma$. Define $B=\{y \mid y \in C(\gamma, X), y(\tau)=\varphi\}$ and a mapping $F: B \rightarrow B$ by $y=F x$, where $y$ is a solution of the following system,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{y}(t)=A y(t)+f(t, x(t))+u(t), \quad t \in \gamma  \tag{4.30}\\
y(\tau)=\varphi
\end{array}\right.
$$

Similar to the proof of Theorem 4.1.1, we can show that $F$ is continuous and compact on $B$. Next, we want to show that there is a constant $\beta_{1}>0$ such that

$$
\|x\|_{C(\gamma, X)} \leq \beta_{1}
$$

for all $x \in B$ and $\lambda \in[0,1]$ satisfying $x=\lambda F x$.

Let $x \in C(\gamma, X)$. We consider the operator equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=\lambda F x, \quad \lambda \in[0,1] . \tag{4.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $x$ is a mild solution of equation (4.31), then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|x(t)\|_{X} & \leq \lambda\|T(t)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+\lambda \int_{0}^{t}\|T(t-s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left[\|f(s, x(s))\|_{X}+\|u(s)\|_{X}\right] d s \\
& \leq \lambda M_{1}\left(\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+\left(K_{1}+K_{3}\right) T_{0}\right) \\
& \leq M_{1}\left(\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+\left(K_{1}+K_{3}\right) T_{0}\right):=\beta_{1}, \quad \lambda \in[0,1],
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\quad M_{1}=\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}}\|T(t-s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \quad$ and $\quad K_{3}=\sup _{s \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|u(s)\|_{X}$.
That is, there exists a constant $\beta_{1}>0$ such that $\|x\|_{C(\gamma, X)} \leq \beta_{1}$ for all $x \in B$ and $x=\lambda F x$ where $\lambda \in[0,1]$. This shows that all mild solution of (4.31) are bounded independently of $\lambda \in[0,1]$. By Leray-Schauder's fixed point theorem, $F$ has a fixed point $x \in C(\gamma, X)$ which is a mild solution of system (4.29). Next, we want to show that a mild solution is unique on $C(\gamma, X)$. Suppose that $x, y$ are mild solutions of system (4.29) on $C(\gamma, X)$. By Theorem 2.3.2(1), there exist constants $K \geq 1$ and $\omega \geq 0$ such that $\|T(t)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq K e^{\omega t}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|x(t)-y(t)\|_{X} & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|T(t-s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|f(s, x(s))-f(s, y(s))\|_{X} d s \\
& \leq K e^{\omega t} \int_{0}^{t} e^{-\omega s}\|x(s)-y(s)\|_{X} d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows from Gronwall Lemma, we obtain $\|x(t)-y(t)\|=0$ for all $t \in \gamma$.
That is, $x=y$. Therefore, system (4.29) has a unique mild solution. Furthermore, a mild solution is a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution.

Now we consider the partition of interval $I=\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. We define $\gamma_{k}=$ $\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right], k=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$, where $\tau_{0}=0$ and $\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}$. Consider any arbitrary interval, say, $\gamma_{k}$ and $x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)=\left(I+B_{k}\right) x\left(\tau_{k}\right)+c_{k} \in X$. By Theorem 4.2.1 and similar procedure of Theorem 4.2.2, we obtain $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is a unique
mild solution of system (4.20) and given by

$$
x(t)= \begin{cases}x_{1}(t), & 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}, \\ x_{k}(t), & \tau_{k-1}<t \leq \tau_{k}, k=2,3, \ldots, \sigma\end{cases}
$$

$x$ is just $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (4.20). By assumption (A2) and (A5), one can verify the priori estimate of solution of system (4.20) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|x(t)\|_{X} & \leq\|U(t, 0)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+\int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left[\|f(s, x(s))\|_{X}+\|u(s)\|_{X}\right] d s \\
& \leq M\left(\left\|x_{0}\right\|_{X}+\left(K_{1}+K_{3}\right) T_{0}\right):=\beta
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\quad M=\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \quad$ and $\quad K_{3}=\sup _{s \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|u(s)\|_{X}$.
That is, there exists a constant $\beta>0$ such that $\|x\|_{P C} \leq \beta$.

### 4.3 Semilinear Impulsive Periodic Control Systems With Parameter Perturbations

We consider the semilinear impulsive periodic control system with parameter perturbations as the following

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{rlrl}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+f(t, x(t))+u(t)+p(t, x(t), \xi), & t \neq \tau_{k},  \tag{4.32}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}+q_{k}(x(t), \xi), & & t=\tau_{k},
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$. In addition to assumptions (A1), (A2), (A4) and (A5), we introduce the following assumption

Assumption (A6) ;
(A6.1) The Fréchet derivative $\frac{\partial}{\partial x} f(t, x)$ exists in $[0, \infty) \times X$. For each $y \in X, \quad t \mapsto \frac{\partial}{\partial x} f(t, x) y \quad$ is strongly measurable, $\quad x \mapsto \frac{\partial}{\partial x} f(t, x) y \quad$ is continuous. For every $\rho>0$, there exists a constant $K_{3}(\rho)>0$ such that

$$
\left\|\frac{\partial}{\partial x} f(t, x)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq K_{3}(\rho)
$$

for all $t \geq 0$ and all $x \in X$ such that $\|x\|_{X} \leq \rho$.
(A6.2) $p(t, x, \xi)$ and $q_{k}(x, \xi)$ satisfy Lipschitz conditions, i.e. for any $(t, x, \xi)$, $(t, y, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, there exists a constant $N(\xi)>0$ such that

$$
\|p(t, x, \xi)-p(t, y, \xi)\|_{x} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{x}
$$

and

$$
\left\|q_{k}(x, \xi)-q_{k}(y, \xi)\right\|_{x} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{x}
$$

(A6.3) $B_{k} \in \mathcal{L}(X)$ and there exists constant $h_{k}(\rho)>0$ such that

$$
\left\|B_{k}(x)-B_{k}(y)\right\|_{X} \leq h_{k}(\rho)\|x-y\|_{X},
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and all $x, y \in X$ such that $\|x\|_{X},\|y\|_{X} \leq \rho$.
(A6.4) The Fréchet derivative $\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}(x)$ exists in $X$. For every $\rho>0$, there exists a constant $\bar{h}_{k}(\rho)>0$ such that

$$
\left\|\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}(x)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq \bar{h}_{k}(\rho)
$$

for all $t \geq 0, k \in \mathbb{N}$ and all $x \in X$ such that $\|x\|_{X} \leq \rho$.

### 4.3.1 Definitions of Solutions

Definition 4.3.1. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a mild solution of impulsive system (4.32) with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0} \in X$ if $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
x(t)= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)[f(s, x(s))+u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s \\
& +\sum_{0<\tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] . \tag{4.33}
\end{align*}
$$

Definition 4.3.2. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a periodic mild solution of system (4.32) if it is a mild solution and there exists $T_{0}>0$ such that $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

Definition 4.3.3. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (4.32) if it is a mild solution and $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

### 4.3.2 Existence and Uniqueness of Periodic Mild Solutions

First, we consider the following reference system

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+f(t, x(t)),, & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{4.34}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t), & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

and assume that $x_{T_{0}}(t)$ is a $T_{0}$ - periodic mild solution of the reference system (4.34) which satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{T_{0}}(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) f(s, x(s)) d s \tag{4.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, we consider the following variation system

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+\frac{\partial}{\partial x} f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(t)\right) x(t), & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{4.36}\\
\Delta x(t) & =\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}(t)\right) x(t), & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

and assume that the variation system (4.36) has only trivial solution.

Theorem 4.3.1. Let assumption (A1), (A2), and (A4)-(A6) holds. Suppose $x_{T_{0}}(t)$ be a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of the reference system (4.34) satisfies

$$
\rho_{0}=\sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X} .
$$

Assume that

1. system (4.36) has only trivial solution,
2. let $\xi_{0}>0$ and $\varepsilon_{o} \in\left(0, \rho-\rho_{0}\right)$ such that $\eta<1$ with

$$
\eta:=M\left(\left[K_{2}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+K_{3}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)\right] T_{0}+\left[h_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+\bar{h}_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)\right] \sigma+\left[T_{0}+\sigma\right] \sup _{\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]} N(\xi)\right)
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
M & =\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}, \\
\bar{h}_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right) & =\sup _{k \in \mathbb{N},\|y\| \leq \varepsilon_{0}}\left\|\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+y\left(\tau_{k}\right)\right)\right\|_{X},
\end{aligned}
$$

3. the following inequality is valid

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right],|\xi| \leq \xi_{0}} \| U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] \|_{X} \leq \varepsilon_{0}(1-\eta) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then for any constant $\rho>\rho_{0}>0$, there exists a sufficiently small $\xi_{0}>0$ such that for every fixed $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ system (4.32) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|<\varepsilon_{0} \quad \text { for all } \quad t \geq 0 \tag{4.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\lim _{\xi \rightarrow 0} x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)=x_{T_{0}}(t) \quad \text { uniformly on } t .
$$

Proof. Let $x(t)=x_{T_{0}}(t)+y(t)$, then we can change system (4.32) into

$$
\begin{align*}
\dot{y}(t) & =A y(t)+\frac{\partial}{\partial x} f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(t)\right) y(t)+o(t, y(t))+u(t)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(t)+y(t), \xi\right), t \neq \tau_{k}, \\
\Delta y(t) & =\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}(t)\right) y(t)+o_{k}(y(t))+c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}(t)+y(t), \xi\right), \quad t=\tau_{k}, \tag{4.38}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
o(t, y(t)) & =f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(t)+y(t)\right)-f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(t)\right)-\frac{\partial}{\partial x} f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(t)\right) y(t) \\
o_{k}(y(t)) & =B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}(t)+y(t)\right)-B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}(t)\right)-\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}(t)\right) y(t) \tag{4.39}
\end{align*}
$$

Let $\quad P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right] ; X\right):=\left\{x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right] ; X\right) \mid x(0)=x\left(T_{0}\right)\right\}$
with norm

$$
\|x\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}=\sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|x(t)\|_{X} .
$$

Let us define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{B}:=\mathcal{B}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)=\left\{y \in P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right] ; X\right) \mid\|y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \varepsilon_{0}\right\} \tag{4.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

and an operator $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right] ; X\right)$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega(x)(t):= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)\left[o(s, y(s))+u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s)+y(s), \xi\right)\right] d s  \tag{4.41}\\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[o_{k}\left(y\left(\tau_{k}\right)\right)+c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] .
\end{align*}
$$

If $y \in \mathcal{B}$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|x\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} & =\left\|x_{T_{0}}+y\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \\
& \leq\left\|x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+\|y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \\
& \leq \rho_{0}+\varepsilon_{0} \\
& \leq \rho_{0}+\left(\rho-\rho_{0}\right)=\rho .
\end{aligned}
$$

From equation (4.41), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)(t)= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] . \tag{4.42}
\end{align*}
$$

For any $x, x_{T_{0}} \in \mathcal{B}$, then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|\Omega(x)-\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \\
& \quad \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|o(s, y(s))+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s)+y(s), \xi\right)-p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right)\right\|_{X} d s \\
& \quad+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t}\left\|U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|o_{k}\left(y\left(\tau_{k}\right)\right)+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X} \\
& \quad \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left(\left\|f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(s)+y\right)-f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(s)\right)-\frac{\partial}{\partial x} f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(s)\right) y\right\|_{X}\right. \\
& \left.\quad+\left\|p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s)+y(s), \xi\right)-p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) d s \\
& \quad+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t}\left\|U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left(\left\|B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+y\right)-B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)\right)-\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)\right) y\right\|_{X}\right. \\
& \left.\quad+\left\|q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left(\left\|f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(s)+y\right)-f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(s)\right)\right\|+\left\|\frac{\partial}{\partial x} f\left(t, x_{T_{0}}(s)\right) y\right\|_{X}\right. \\
& \left.+\left\|p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s)+y(s), \xi\right)-p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t}\left\|U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left(\left\|B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+y\right)-B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)\right)\right\|\right. \\
& \left.+\left\|\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)\right) y\right\|_{X}+\left\|q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) \\
& \leq M\left(\left[K_{2}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+K_{3}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+N(\xi)\right] T_{0}+\left[h_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+\bar{h}_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+N(\xi)\right] \sigma\right)\left\|x-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let us choose $\xi_{0}>0$ and $\varepsilon_{0} \in\left(0, \rho-\rho_{0}\right)$ such that $\eta<1$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta:=M\left(\left[K_{2}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+K_{3}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)\right] T_{0}+\left[h_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+\bar{h}_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)\right] \sigma+\left[T_{0}+\sigma\right] \sup _{\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]} N(\xi)\right) . \tag{4.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

So

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Omega(x)-\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \eta\left\|x-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \tag{4.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows from (4.42), (4.44,) and assumption (3) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|\Omega(x)\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} & \leq\left\|\Omega(x)-\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \\
& \leq \eta\left\|x-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+\varepsilon_{0}(1-\eta) \\
& \leq \eta \varepsilon_{0}+\varepsilon_{0}(1-\eta)=\varepsilon_{0}
\end{aligned}
$$

from which we know that $\Omega(x) \in \mathcal{B}$, then $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}$ is a contraction mapping. Therefore, there exists a unique fixed point $y_{1}(t) \in \mathcal{B}$. From the fact that $y_{1}(t)$ is a solution of system (4.38), we know $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)=x_{T_{0}}(t)+y_{1}(t)$ is a $T_{0^{-}}$periodic mild solution of (4.32) and satisfies

$$
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|=\left\|y_{1}(t)\right\|<\varepsilon_{0}
$$

So we have

$$
\lim _{\xi \rightarrow 0} x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}=x_{T_{0}}(t) \quad \text { uniformly on } t
$$

This completes the proof.

## CHAPTER V

## APPLICATIONS

In this chapter, to illustrate the application of our work, we apply Theorem 4.1.5 to prove the existence of periodic mild solution of systems governed by semilinear partial differential equations of parabolic types with impulses.

The first part of this chapter is about basic concepts of Sobolev spaces and related results. The second part consists of our example that we introduce constructively to show how our abstract results can be applied.

### 5.1 Terminology

In the following we use $y=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots, y_{n}\right)$ to be a variable point in the $n$-dimensional Euclidean space $\mathbb{R}^{n}$. For any two such points $y=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots, y_{n}\right)$ and $z=\left(z_{1}, z_{2}, \ldots, z_{n}\right)$ we set $y \cdot z=\sum_{i=1}^{n} y_{i} z_{i}$ and $|y|^{2}=y \cdot y$.

An $n$-tuple of nonnegative integers $\alpha=\left(\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right)$ is called a multiindex and we define

$$
|\alpha|=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \alpha_{i}
$$

and

$$
y^{\alpha}=y_{1}^{\alpha_{1}} y_{2}^{\alpha_{2}} \cdots y_{n}^{\alpha_{n}} \quad \text { for } \quad y=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots, y_{n}\right) .
$$

Denoting $\quad D_{k}=\frac{\partial}{\partial y_{k}} \quad$ and $\quad D=\left(D_{1}, D_{2}, \ldots, D_{n}\right)$ we have

$$
D^{\alpha}=D_{1}^{\alpha_{1}} D_{2}^{\alpha_{2}} \cdots D_{n}^{\alpha_{n}}=\frac{\partial^{\alpha_{1}}}{\partial y_{1}^{\alpha_{1}}} \frac{\partial^{\alpha_{2}}}{\partial y_{2}^{\alpha_{2}}} \cdots \frac{\partial^{\alpha_{n}}}{\partial y_{n}^{\alpha_{n}}} .
$$

Let $\Omega$ be a fixed domain in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ with boundary and closure $\bar{\Omega}$. Assume that $\partial \Omega$ is sufficiently smooth, e.g., $\partial \Omega$ is of the class $C^{k}$ for some suitable $k \geq 0$,
this means that for each point $y \in \partial \Omega$ there is a ball $\mathcal{B}$ with center at $y$ such that $\partial \Omega \cap \mathcal{B}$ can be represent in the form $y_{i}=\varphi\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{i-1}, y_{i+1}, \ldots, y_{n}\right)$ for some $i$, and $\varphi$ is a $k$-times continuously differentiable function.

For a nonnegative integer $m$, we denote by $C^{m}(\Omega)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.C^{m}(\bar{\Omega})\right)$ the set of all $m$-times continuously differentiable real-valued or complex-valued functions in $\Omega$ (resp. $\bar{\Omega}$, by $C_{0}^{m}(\Omega)$ the subspace of $C^{m}(\Omega)$ consisting of those functions which have compact support in $\Omega$.

For $x \in C^{m}(\Omega)$ and $1 \leq p<\infty$, we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|x\|_{m, p}=\left(\int_{\Omega} \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m}\left|D^{\alpha} x\right|^{p} d y\right)^{\frac{1}{p}} \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also for $p=2$ and $u, v \in C^{m}(\Omega)$, we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle u, v\rangle_{m}=\int_{\Omega} \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} D^{\alpha} u D^{\bar{\alpha}} u d y \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\hat{C}_{p}^{m}(\Omega)$ be the subset of $C^{m}(\Omega)$ consisting of those function $x$ for which $\|x\|_{m, p}<\infty$. We define $W^{m, p}(\Omega)$ and $W_{0}^{m, p}(\Omega)$ to be the completions in the norm $\|\cdot\|_{m, p}$ of $\hat{C}_{p}^{m}(\Omega)$ and $C_{0}^{m}(\Omega)$, respectively. The space $W^{m, p}(\Omega)$ consists of function $x \in L^{p}(\Omega)$ whose derivatives $D^{\alpha} x$ in the sense of distribution, of order $|\alpha| \leq m$ are in $L^{p}(\Omega)$ and $W_{0}^{m, p}(\Omega)$ is the closure of $C_{0}^{m}(\Omega)$, in $W^{m, p}(\Omega)$.

It is well known that $W^{m, p}(\Omega)$ and $W_{0}^{m, p}(\Omega)$ are Banach spaces with the usual norm $\|\cdot\|_{m, p}$. Then $W^{m, p}(\Omega)$ is separable, uniformly convex and hence reflexive. Let

$$
H^{m}(\Omega)=W^{m, 2}(\Omega) \quad \text { and } \quad H_{0}^{m}(\Omega)=W_{0}^{m, 2}(\Omega)
$$

The spaces $H^{m}(\Omega)$ and $H_{0}^{m}(\Omega)$ are Hilbert spaces with the scalar product $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle$ is given by (5.2). The following embedding theorem describes various relations among the above spaces.

Theorem 5.1.1. (Sobolev) The following relations among $W^{m, p}(\Omega), C^{m}(\Omega)$ and $L^{p}(\Omega)$ hold;

1. $W^{m, p}(\Omega) \subset W^{m, r}(\Omega)$ if $1 \leq r \leq p$ and the embedding is continuous.
2. $W^{m, r}(\Omega) \subset W^{j, p}(\Omega)$ if $1 \leq r, p<\infty, j$ and $m$ are integers such that $0 \leq j \leq m$ and $\frac{1}{p}>\frac{1}{r}+\frac{j}{n}-\frac{m}{n}$ and the embedding is compact.
3. $W^{m, p}(\Omega) \subset L^{\frac{n p}{n-m p}}(\Omega)$ if $m p \leq n$ and there exists a constant $c_{1}$ such that

$$
\|x\|_{0, \frac{n p}{n-m p}} \leq c_{1}\|x\|_{m, p} \quad \text { for } \quad x \in W^{m, p}(\Omega)
$$

4. $W^{m, p}(\Omega) \subset C^{k}(\bar{\Omega})$ if $0 \leq k \leq m-\frac{n}{p}$ and there exists a constant $c_{2}$ such that

$$
\sup \left\{\left|D^{\alpha} x(y)\right| ;|\alpha| \leq k, y \in \bar{\Omega}\right\} \leq c_{2}\|x\|_{m, p} \quad \text { for } \quad x \in W^{m, p}(\Omega)
$$

5. (Poincaré Inequality) There exists a constant $c=c(\Omega)$ such that

$$
\inf _{k \in \mathbb{R}}\|x+k\|_{0,2} \leq c(\Omega)\|\nabla x\|_{0,2} \quad \text { for } \quad x \in H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)
$$

Since $\partial \Omega$ is smooth, $C^{\infty}(\Omega)$ is dense in $W_{0}^{m, p}(\Omega)$ and $L_{2}(\Omega), W_{0}^{m, p}(\Omega)$ is dense in $L_{2}(\Omega)$. From Sobolev's embedding theorem, we have that the embeddings

$$
C^{\infty}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow W_{0}^{m, p}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L_{2}(\Omega)
$$

For any $\sigma=k+\eta>0$, where $k$ is a nonnegative integer and $\eta \in$ $(0,1), C^{\sigma}(\bar{\Omega})$ denotes the Banach space consisting of those functions belonging to $C^{k}(\bar{\Omega})$ whose derivatives $D^{\alpha} x$ of order $|\alpha|=k$ satisfy a uniform Hölder condition with exponent $\eta$. The norm in this space is defined as

$$
\|x\|_{C^{\sigma}(\bar{\Omega})}=\|x\|_{C^{k}(\bar{\Omega})}+\sum_{|\alpha|=k}\left[D^{\alpha} x\right]_{\eta},
$$

with

$$
[v]_{\eta}=\sup _{y, z \in \Omega, y \neq z} \frac{|v(y)-v(z)|}{|y-z|^{\eta}} .
$$

### 5.2 Example

In the following, we give some examples of the existence of periodic mild solution of semilinear impulsive periodic systems.

Example 5.2.1. Consider

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial x(t, y)}{\partial t} & =\frac{\partial^{2} x(t, y)}{\partial y^{2}}+f_{1}(t, x(t, y)), \quad y \in \Omega, \quad t \neq \tau_{k}, \quad t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right] \\
\Delta x\left(t_{k}, y\right) & =B_{k} x\left(t_{k}, y\right), \quad t=\tau_{k}, \quad k=0,1,2, \ldots, \sigma,  \tag{5.3}\\
x(0, y) & =x\left(T_{0}, y\right), \quad \text { on } \Omega, \\
\left.x(t, y)\right|_{\partial \Omega} & =0, \quad t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right],
\end{align*}
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$and $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is a bounded open domain with $C^{2}$-boundary. Take $X=L^{2}(\Omega), A:=\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial y^{2}}$ with domain $D(A)=\left\{H^{2}(\Omega) \cap\right.$ $\left.H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right\}$. We suppose that $f_{1}$ satisfies the following assumption :
(F) $f_{1}:[0, \infty) \times \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is an operator such that $f_{1}\left(t+T_{0}, x\right)=f_{1}(t, x)$ and $t \mapsto f_{1}(t, x)$ is strongly measurable. For every $\rho>0$ there exist constants $M_{1}, M_{2}>0$ such that

$$
\left|f_{1}(t, x)\right| \leq M_{1}
$$

and

$$
\left|f_{1}(t, x)-f_{1}(t, y)\right| \leq M_{2}|x-y|,
$$

for all $t \geq 0$ and all $x, y \in \mathbb{R}$.

Define $x(t)(y)=x(t, y)$ and $B_{k} x\left(t_{k}\right)=f_{k}\left(t_{k}\right) x\left(t_{k}\right)$ where $f_{k} \in L^{\infty}(\Omega)$. Then it is clearly that $B_{k}$ satisfies assumption (A1.3). Given $z \in X$, define mappings $f:\left[0, T_{0}\right] \times X \rightarrow X$ by

$$
f(t, z)(y)=f_{1}(t, z(y))
$$

In order to apply Theorem 4.1 .5 we have to show that $f$ take value in $X$ and satisfies assumption (A5).

Lemma 5.2.2. $f(t, z)$ satisfies assumption (A5) in Section 4.1.

Proof. Since $f\left(t+T_{0}, z\right)(y)=f_{1}\left(t+T_{0}, z(y)\right)=f_{1}(t, z(y))=f(t, z)(y)$, so that $f\left(t+T_{0}, z\right)=f(t, z)$. Next, we show that $f$ takes value in $X$. Since $f(t, z)(y)=$ $f_{1}(t, z(y))$, we obtain for almost all $t$ that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\Omega}|f(t, z)(y)|^{2} d y & =\int_{\Omega}\left|f_{1}(t, z(y))\right|^{2} d y \\
& \leq \int_{\Omega} M_{1}^{2} d y<\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

since $\Omega$ is bounded. This show that $f(t, z) \in L^{2}(\Omega)$ for almost all $t$ and all $z \in X$, so that $f$ is well defined on $\left[0, T_{0}\right] \times X$. Next, we show that $f(t, \cdot)$ satisfies a Lipschitz condition. For any $z_{1}, z_{2} \in L^{2}(\Omega)$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|f\left(t, z_{1}\right)-f\left(t, z_{2}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}(\Omega)}^{2} & =\int_{\Omega}\left|f\left(t, z_{1}\right)(y)-f\left(t, z_{2}\right)(y)\right|^{2} d y \\
& =\int_{\Omega}\left|f_{1}\left(t, z_{1}(y)\right)-f_{1}\left(t, z_{2}(y)\right)\right|^{2} d x \\
& \leq M_{2}^{2} \int_{\Omega}\left|z_{1}(y)-z_{2}(y)\right|^{2} d y=M_{2}^{2}\left\|z_{1}-z_{2}\right\|_{L^{2}(\Omega)}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

for almost all $t$. Hence $f(t, \cdot)$ satisfies a Lipschitz condition for almost all $t$. This shows that $f$ satisfies assumption (A5).

Thus system (5.3) can be written as

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+f(t, x(t)), & & t \neq \tau_{k},  \tag{5.4}\\
\Delta x\left(t_{k}\right) & =B_{k} x\left(t_{k}\right), & & t=\tau_{k}, \quad k=0,1,2, \ldots, \sigma, \\
x(0) & =x\left(T_{0}\right) . & &
\end{align*}\right.
$$

Obviously, it satisfies all the assumptions given in our former Theorem 4.1.5, our result can be applied to system (5.3).

## Example 5.2.3. Consider

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial x(t, y)}{\partial t} & =\frac{\partial^{2} x(t, y)}{\partial y^{2}}+\sin t, \quad y \in \Omega, \quad t \neq \tau_{k}, \quad t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right] \\
\Delta x\left(t_{k}, y\right) & =-x\left(t_{k}, y\right), \quad t=\tau_{k}, \quad k=0,1,2, \ldots, \sigma,  \tag{5.5}\\
x(0, y) & =x\left(T_{0}, y\right), \quad \text { on } \Omega, \\
\left.x(t, y)\right|_{\partial \Omega} & =0, \quad t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right],
\end{align*}
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$and $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is a bounded open domain with $C^{2}$-boundary. Take $X=L^{2}(\Omega), A:=\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial y^{2}}$ with domain $D(A)=\left\{H^{2}(\Omega) \cap\right.$ $\left.H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right\}$. Define $x(t)(y)=x(t, y), f(t, x)=\sin t$ and $B_{k} x\left(t_{k}\right)=-x\left(t_{k}\right)$. Then it is clearly that $B_{k}$ and $f$ satisfy assumption (A1.3) and (A5), respectively. Thus system (5.5) can be written as (5.4). Since it satisfies all the assumptions given in our former Theorem 4.1.5, our result can be applied to system (5.5).

## CHAPTER VI

## CONCLUSIONS

### 6.1 Thesis Summary

In this thesis, we have studied the existence of periodic mild solutions for linear and semilinear impulsive periodic systems with impulses, in these case where the operator involved is the infinitesimal generator of $C_{0}$-semigroup.

### 6.1.1 Problems

This thesis has considered the following problems :

1. Linear periodic systems with impulses :
1.1 Existence of periodic mild solutions for the homogenous linear impulsive periodic systems.

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t), & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{6.1}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t), & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
1.2 Existence of periodic mild solutions for the nonhomogenous linear impulsive periodic control systems.

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+u(t), & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{6.2}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}, & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
1.3 Existence of periodic mild solutions for the linear impulsive control systems with parameter perturbations.

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+u(t)+p(t, x(t), \xi),, & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{6.3}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}+q_{k}(x(t), \xi), & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
2. Semilinear periodic systems with impulses :
2.1 Existence of periodic mild solutions for the semilinear impulsive systems

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+f(t, x), & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{6.4}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t), & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where

$$
\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right) \text {for all } k \in \mathbb{N}
$$

2.2 Existence of periodic mild solutions for the semilinear impulsive control systems.

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+f(t, x)+u(t), & & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{6.5}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}, & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where

$$
\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right) \text {for all } k \in \mathbb{N}
$$

2.3 Existence of periodic mild solutions for the semilinear impulsive control systems with parameter perturbations.

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{rlrl}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+f(t, x(t))+u(t)+p(t, x(t), \xi), & t \neq \tau_{k}  \tag{6.6}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}+q_{k}(x(t), \xi), & & t=\tau_{k}
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

### 6.1.2 Assumptions

## Assumption (A1) ;

(A1.1) $0=\tau_{0}<\tau_{1}<\tau_{2}<\ldots<\tau_{k}<\ldots, \quad \tau_{k} \rightarrow \infty \quad$ as $k \rightarrow \infty \quad$ and
there exists a positive integer $\sigma$ such that $\tau_{k+\sigma}=\tau_{k}+T_{0}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
(A1.2) $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}-$ semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in $X$.
(A1.3) $\quad B_{k} \in \mathcal{L}(X)$ such that $B_{k+\sigma}=B_{k}$.

## Assumption (A2) ;

(A2.1) $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$.
(A2.2) $u \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ such that $u\left(t+T_{0}\right)=u(t)$.
(A2.3) $c_{k} \in X$ and $c_{k+\sigma}=c_{k}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

Assumption (A3) ;
(A3.1) $A^{*}$ is the infinitesimal generator of the adjoint semigroup $\left\{T^{*}(t), t \geq 0\right\}$ in $X^{*}$.
(A3.2) $B_{k}^{*} \in \mathcal{L}\left(X^{*}\right)$ such that $B_{k+\sigma}^{*}=B_{k}^{*}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
Assumption (A4) ;
(A4.1) $p(\cdot, x, \xi) \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ such that $p\left(t+T_{0}, x, \xi\right)=p(t, x, \xi)$ for all $(t, x, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$.
(A4.2) $q_{k} \in C\left(\mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right], X\right)$ such that $q_{k+\sigma}(x, \xi)=q_{k}(x, \xi)$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$
(A4.3) For each $(t, x, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, there exists a nonnegative function $\chi(\xi)$ such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\lim _{\xi \rightarrow 0} \chi(\xi)=\chi(0)=0 \\
\text { and }\|p(t, x, \xi)\|_{x} \leq \chi(\xi), \quad\left\|q_{k}(x, \xi)\right\|_{x} \leq \chi(\xi)
\end{gather*}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

## Assumption (A5) ;

(A5) $f:[0, \infty) \times X \rightarrow X$ is an operator such that $f\left(t+T_{0}, x\right)=f(t, x)$ and $t \mapsto f(t, x)$ is strongly measurable. For every $\rho>0$, there exist constants $K_{1}(\rho), K_{2}(\rho)>0$ such that

$$
\|f(t, x)\|_{X} \leq K_{1}(\rho)
$$

and

$$
\|f(t, x)-f(t, y)\|_{X} \leq K_{2}(\rho)\|x-y\|_{X}
$$

for all $t \geq 0$ and all $x, y \in X$ such that $\|x\|_{x},\|y\|_{x} \leq \rho$.

## Assumption (A6) ;

(A6.1) The Fréchet derivative $\frac{\partial}{\partial x} f(t, x)$ exists in $[0, \infty) \times X$. For each $y \in X, \quad t \mapsto \frac{\partial}{\partial x} f(t, x) y \quad$ is strongly measurable, $\quad x \mapsto \frac{\partial}{\partial x} f(t, x) y \quad$ is continuous. For every $\rho>0$, there exists a constant $K_{3}(\rho)>0$ such that

$$
\left\|\frac{\partial}{\partial x} f(t, x)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq K_{3}(\rho)
$$

for all $t \geq 0$ and all $x \in X$ such that $\|x\|_{X} \leq \rho$.
(A6.2) $p(t, x, \xi)$ and $q_{k}(x, \xi)$ satisfy Lipschitz conditions,i.e. for any $(t, x, \xi)$, $(t, y, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, there exists a constant $N(\xi)>0$ such that

$$
\|p(t, x, \xi)-p(t, y, \xi)\|_{x} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{x}
$$

and

$$
\left\|q_{k}(x, \xi)-q_{k}(y, \xi)\right\|_{x} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{x}
$$

(A6.3) $B_{k} \in \mathcal{L}(X)$ and there exists constant $h_{k}(\rho)>0$ such that

$$
\left\|B_{k}(x)-B_{k}(y)\right\|_{X} \leq h_{k}(\rho)\|x-y\|_{X},
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and all $x, y \in X$ such that $\|x\|_{X},\|y\|_{X} \leq \rho$.
(A6.4) The Fréchet derivative $\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}(x)$ exists in $X$. For every $\rho>0$, there exists a constant $\bar{h}_{k}(\rho)>0$ such that

$$
\left\|\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}(x)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \leq \bar{h}_{k}(\rho)
$$

for all $t \geq 0, k \in \mathbb{N}$ and all $x \in X$ such that $\|x\|_{X} \leq \rho$.

### 6.1.3 Results

The main results of this thesis are summarized as follows :

Theorem 6.1.1. Let assumption (A1) hold. The system (6.1) has a periodic mild solution if and only if the operator $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ has a fixed point $x_{0} \in X$.

Theorem 6.1.2. Let assumption (A1) hold. Furthermore, assume that $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$. Then system (6.1) either has a unique trivial solution or have finitely many linearly independent nontrivial periodic mild solutions in $P C([0, \infty), X)$.

Theorem 6.1.3. If system (6.1) has only trivial solution, then system (6.2) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{T_{0}}(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s  \tag{6.8}\\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} .
\end{align*}
$$

Theorem 6.1.4. Assume that (A1) and (A2) hold. Furthermore, assume that $X$ is a Hilbert space and $u \in L_{\text {loc }}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$. If the system (6.1) have $m$ linearly independent periodic mild solutions $x^{1}, x^{2}, \ldots, x^{m}$ with $1 \leq m \leq n$ where $x^{i}$ are periodic mild solutions of the system (6.1) corresponding to initial conditions $x^{i}(0)=x_{0}^{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, m$, then

1. the adjoint system (A.19) also have $m$ linearly independent periodic mild solutions $y^{1}, y^{2}, \ldots, y^{m}$.
2. system (6.2) has a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle y, z\rangle=0, \tag{6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $y \in X^{*}$ satisfying

$$
\begin{gather*}
{\left[I-U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] y=0}  \tag{6.10}\\
\text { and } z:=\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}, \\
\text { or if and only if }
\end{gather*}
$$

$$
\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\langle y(s), u(s)\rangle d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\langle y\left(\tau_{k}\right), c_{k}\right\rangle=0 .
$$

Furthermore, let $x_{a}(t)$ be a particular $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (6.2), each $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of system (6.2) has the the form

$$
x(t)=x_{a}(t)+\sum_{i=1}^{m} \alpha_{i} x^{i}(t)
$$

where $\alpha_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, m$, are constants.

Theorem 6.1.5. If system (6.2) has a bounded mild solution, then it has at least one $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution.

## Corollary 6.1.6.

1. Assume that system (6.2) has no $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution, then all of its solutions are unbounded for $t \geq 0$.
2. Assume that system (6.2) has a unique bounded mild solution for $t \geq 0$, then this solution is $T_{0}$-periodic.

Theorem 6.1.7. Let assumptions (A1), (A2) and (A4) hold. Assume that

1. system (6.1) has only trivial solution,
2. the following inequality is valid

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{0}=\sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}<\rho \tag{6.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\rho$ be any positive real number,
3. $p(t, x, \xi)$ and $q_{k}(x, \xi)$ satisfy Lipschitz conditions, i.e. for any $(t, x, \xi)$, $(t, y, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, there exists a constant $N(\xi)>0$ such that

$$
\|p(t, x, \xi)-p(t, y, \xi)\|_{x} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{x}
$$

and

$$
\left\|q_{k}(x, \xi)-q_{k}(y, \xi)\right\|_{X} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{X} .
$$

Then for any constant $\rho>\rho_{0}>0$, there exists a sufficiently small $\xi_{0}>0$ such that for every fixed $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ system (6.3) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}<\rho-\rho_{0} \tag{6.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{\xi \rightarrow 0} x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)=x_{T_{0}}(t) \tag{6.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

uniformly on $t$.

Theorem 6.1.8. Let assumptions (A1), (A2) and (A4) hold. Assume that

1. system (6.1) has only trivial solution,
2. the following inequality is valid

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{0}=\sup _{t \in[0, \infty]}\left\|x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}<\rho \tag{6.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then for any constant $\rho>\rho_{0}>0$, there exists a sufficiently small $\xi_{0}>0$ such that for every fixed $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ system (6.3) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X} \leq \rho-\rho_{0} \tag{6.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 6.1.9. If assumptions (A1) and (A5) hold, then system (6.4) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ and there exists a constant $\beta>0$ such that

$$
\|x\|_{P C} \leq \beta
$$

Theorem 6.1.10. If assumptions (A1), (A2) and (A5) hold, then system (6.5) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ and there exists a constant $\beta>0$ such that

$$
\|x\|_{P C} \leq \beta
$$

Theorem 6.1.11. Let assumption (A1), (A2) and (A4)-(A6) holds. Suppose $x_{T_{0}}(t)$ be a $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution of the reference system (4.34) satisfies

$$
\rho_{0}=\sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}
$$

Assume that

1. system (4.36) has only trivial solution,
2. let $\xi_{0}>0$ and $\varepsilon_{o} \in\left(0, \rho-\rho_{0}\right)$ such that $\eta<1$ with

$$
\eta:=M\left(\left[K_{2}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+K_{3}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)\right] T_{0}+\left[h_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)+\bar{h}_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right)\right] \sigma+\left[T_{0}+\sigma\right] \sup _{\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]} N(\xi)\right)
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
M & =\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}, \\
\bar{h}_{k}\left(\varepsilon_{0}\right) & =\sup _{k \in \mathbb{N},\|y\| \leq \varepsilon_{0}}\left\|\frac{\partial}{\partial x} B_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+y\left(\tau_{k}\right)\right)\right\|_{X},
\end{aligned}
$$

3. the following inequality is valid

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right],|\xi| \leq \xi_{0}} \| U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] \|_{X} \leq \varepsilon_{0}(1-\eta) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then for any constant $\rho>\rho_{0}>0$, there exists a sufficiently small $\xi_{0}>0$ such that for every fixed $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ system (6.6) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|<\varepsilon_{0} \quad \text { for all } \quad t \geq 0 \tag{6.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\lim _{\xi \rightarrow 0} x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)=x_{T_{0}}(t) \quad \text { uniformly on } t .
$$

### 6.1.4 Applications

All results of the abstract framework in this thesis can be applied to semilinear partial differential equations of parabolic types with impulses. The example concerning second order semilinear parabolic impulsive differential equation was given. We prove the existence of periodic mild solutions.

### 6.1.5 Suggestion for Further Work

We should observe that further problems can be considered. For instance, how to deal with the relaxation and optimal control for impulsive periodic control problem. Discuss existence of almost periodic solution for linear and semilinear impulsive control of almost periodic systems. Furthermore, we can consider other application problems and computation algorithm. We will continue to study in this field.

REFERENCES

## REFERENCES

Ahmed, N. U. (1991). Semigroup Theory with Applications to Systems and Control, Longman Scientific \& Technical, New York.

Bainov, D. D. and Simeonov, P. S. (1993). Impulsive Differential Equations : Periodic Solutions and Applications, Longman Group UK Limited.

Bainov, D. D. and Simeonov, P. S. (1989). Systems with Impulse Effect : Stability, Theory, and Applications, Ellis Horwood Ltd., Chichister.

Benchohra, M., Henderson, J. and Ntouyas, S. K. (2001). On periodic boundary value problem for first order impulsive differential inclusions, Dynamic Systems and Applications, Vol. 10, pp. 477-488.

Dugundji, J. and Granas, A. (2003). Fixed Point Theory, Springer-Verlag New York, Inc.

Gilbarg, D. and Trudinger, N. S. (1980). Elliptic Partial Differential Equations of Second Order, Ney York: Springer-Verlag.

Hristova, S. G. and Bainov, D. D. (1987). Existence of periodic solutions of nonlinear systems of differential equations with impulsive effect, Journal of Mathematical Analysis and Applications, Vol. 125, pp. 192202.

Kreyszig, E. (1978). Introductory functional analysis with applications, John Wiley \& Sons, Inc.

Lakmeche, A. and Arino, O. (2000). Bifurcation of nontrivial periodic solutions of impulsive differential equations arising in chemotherapeutic treatment, Dynamics of Continuous Discrete and Impulsive Systems, Vol. 7, pp. 265-287.

Lakshmikantham, V., Bainov, D. D. and Simenov, P. S. (1989). Theory of Impulsive Differential Equations, Series in modern applied mathematics. Singapore and Teaneck, NJ : World Scientific.

Nieto, J. J. (2002). Periodic boundary value problems for first-order impulsive ordinary differential equations, Nonlinear Analysis, Vol. 51, pp. 1223-1232.

Liu, J. (1999). Nonlinear Impulsive Evolution Equations, Dynamics of Continuous Discrete and Impulsive Systems, Vol. 6, pp. 77-85.

Pazy, A. (1983). Semigroups of linear operators and applications to partial differential equations, Applied mathematics sciences 44. New York: Springer-Verlag.

Sattayatham, P. and Huawu, K. (2000). Relaxation and optimal controls for a class of infinite dimensional nonlinear evolution systems, Journal of Guizhou University. Vol. 16, pp. 241-250.

Shulgin, B., Stone, L. and Agur, Z. (1998). Pulse vaccination strategy in the SIR epidemic model, Bulletin of Mathematical Biology, Vol. 60.

Yang, T. (2001). Impulsive Control Theory, Springer, New York.

Yosida, K. (1980). Functional Analysis(6th ed.). Berling : Springer-Verlag.

Zeider, E. (1990). Nonlinear Functional Analysis and Its Applications II, Springer, New York.

## APPENDICES

## APPENDIX A

## PUBLICATION

# IMPULSIVE PERIODIC CONTROL SYSTEM WITH PARAMETER PERTURBATIONS* 

S. Hinpang, X. Xiang and P. Sattayatham


#### Abstract

In this paper, we study the existence of periodic solution for impulsive periodic control system with parameter perturbations on infinite dimensional space, in these cases where the differential operator involved is the infinitesimal generator of $C_{0}{ }^{-}$ semigroup.


Keywords : Impulsive differential equation, semigroup, periodic solution, Banach space.

2000 Mathematics Subject Classification : 34A37, 34G10, 34K13.

## A. 1 Introduction

The impulsive differential equations appear to a natural framework for mathematical modelings of several real world phenomena. For instance, systems with impulse effects have applications in physics, in biotechnology, in population dynamics, in optimal control and so on. For an introduction to the theory of impulsive systems, we refer the reader to see in [4]. In the framework of impulsive differential equations, some exis-

[^0]tence result of periodic solutions for impulsive periodic control systems with parameter perturbations on finite dimensional space has been studied by many authors in [2] and [6].

However, the investigation of the existence of periodic solutions for impulsive periodic control systems with parameter perturbations on infinite dimensional space have not been study. We apply the semigroup theory (see [1] and [5]) and fixed point theorems (see [3] and [7]) for impulsive systems, we establish conditions for ensuring that the system has a unique periodic solution.

The organization of this paper is as follows. Firstly, in Section 2, we introduce some definition of impulsive evolution operator and prove the existence of periodic solution for homogeneous linear impulsive periodic system by using fixed point theorem and Fredholm alternative theorem. In Section 3, nonhomogeneous linear impulsive periodic control system is investigated, we prove the existence of periodic solution by using properties of compact operators and boundedness of solution. Finally, in Section 4, we prove the existence of periodic solution for impulsive periodic control system with parameter perturbations by using fixed point theorems.

## A. 2 Impulsive Evolution Operator and Homogeneous Linear Impulsive Periodic System

Throughout this paper $X$ will denote a Banach space with norm $\|\cdot\|_{X}$ and $\mathcal{L}(X)$ denote the space of all bounded linear operators on $X$. Let $P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right] ; X\right)$ be the space of all functions $x:\left[0, T_{0}\right] \rightarrow X, x(t)$ is continuous at $t \neq \tau_{k}$, left continuous at $t=\tau_{k}$ and the right limit $x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)$exists for $k=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$, where $0=\tau_{0}<\tau_{1}<\tau_{2}<$ $\ldots<\tau_{\sigma-1}<\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}<\infty$, which is a Banach space with the norm

$$
\|x\|_{P C}=\sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|x(t)\|_{X}
$$

In this paper, we study the existence of periodic solutions for impulsive periodic
control systems with parameter perturbations on infinite dimensional space,

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+u(t)+p(t, x, \xi), & & t \neq \tau_{k},  \tag{A.1}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}+q_{k}(x, \xi), & & t=\tau_{k}, k \in \mathbb{N}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$. Suppose that the system (A.1) satisfy the following assumptions (A1), (A2), and (A3).
(A1.1) $0=\tau_{0}<\tau_{1}<\tau_{2}<\ldots<\tau_{k}<\ldots, \tau_{k} \rightarrow \infty$ as $k \rightarrow \infty$ and there exists a positive integer $\sigma$ such that $\tau_{k+\sigma}=\tau_{k}+T_{0}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
(A1.2) $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a $C_{0}$-semigroup $\{T(t), t \geq 0\}$ in $X$.
(A1.3) $B_{k} \in \mathcal{L}(X)$ such that $B_{k+\sigma}=B_{k}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
(A2.1) $u \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ such that $u\left(t+T_{0}\right)=u(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.
(A2.2) $c_{k} \in X$ such that $c_{k+\sigma}=c_{k}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.
(A3.1) For each $\rho>0$ and $x \in \mathcal{B}_{\rho}:=\left\{x \in X \mid\|x\|_{X} \leq \rho\right\} . p(\cdot, x, \xi) \in P C([0, \infty), X)$ such that $p\left(t+T_{0}, x, \xi\right)=p(t, x, \xi)$ for all $(t, x, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$.
(A3.2) $q_{k} \in C\left(\mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right], X\right)$ such that $q_{k+\sigma}(x, \xi)=q_{k}(x, \xi)$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $(x, \xi) \in \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$.
(A3.3) there exists a nonnegative function $\chi(\xi)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|p(t, x, \xi)\|_{X} \leq \chi(\xi),\left\|q_{k}(x, \xi)\right\|_{X} \leq \chi(\xi) \quad \text { and } \quad \lim _{\xi \rightarrow 0} \chi(\xi)=\chi(0)=0 \tag{A.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $(t, x, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$.
For the system (A.1), we give the following definition.

Definition A.1. Let Assumption (A1) hold. An operator value function $U(t, s)$ with values in $\mathcal{L}(X)$, defined on the triangle $\Delta \equiv\{0 \leq s \leq t \leq a\}$ with $t, s \in\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right]$
for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$, given by

$$
U(t, s)=\left\{\begin{array}{lc}
T(t-s), & \tau_{k-1} \leq s \leq t \leq \tau_{k},  \tag{A.3}\\
T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right) T\left(\tau_{k}-s\right), & \tau_{k-1}<s \leq \tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}, \\
T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\prod_{j=i+1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right] & \left(I+B_{i}\right) T\left(\tau_{i}-s\right), \\
& \text { for } i<k, \tau_{i-1}<s \leq \tau_{i}<\ldots<\tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1} .
\end{array}\right.
$$

is called an impulsive evolution operator.

Proposition A.1. Let assumption (A1) hold and $\{U(t, s), 0 \leq s \leq t \leq a\}$ be a family of impulsive evolution operators. For each fixed $T_{0}=\tau_{\sigma}>0$, then the following are satisfied :
(i) $U(t, t)=I$, the identity operator on $X$;
(ii) $U(t, s)=U(t, r) U(r, s)$ for all $0 \leq s \leq r \leq t \leq a$;
(iii) $U\left(t+K T_{0}, s+K T_{0}\right)=U(t, s)$ for all $K \in \mathbb{N}$ and $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}$ with $T_{0} \leq a$.
(iv) $U(t, 0)=U(\bar{t}, 0)\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{M} \quad$ where $t=\bar{t}+M T_{0} \quad$ for all $\bar{t} \in\left[0, T_{0}\right] \quad$ and $\quad M \in$ $\mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$.

Corollary A.2. Let assumption (A1) hold and $\{U(t, s): 0 \leq s \leq t \leq a\}$ be a family of impulsive evolution operators, then

$$
\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq a}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}<\infty \quad \text { for all } \quad a>0
$$

Definition A.2. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty) ; X)$ is said to be a mild solution of the system (A.1) with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0}$ if $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)[u(s)+p(s, x, \xi)] d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}(x, \xi)\right] . \tag{A.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Definition A.3. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty) ; X)$ is said to be a periodic solution of the $\operatorname{system}(\mathrm{A} .1)$ if there exists $T_{0}>0$ such that $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

Definition A.4. Function $x \in P C([0, \infty) ; X)$ is said to be $a T_{0}$-periodic solution of the system (A.1) if $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$.

First, we consider the homogeneous linear impulsive periodic system,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{rl}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t),  \tag{A.5}\\
& t \neq \tau_{k}, \\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t),
\end{array} \quad t=\tau_{k}, k \in \mathbb{N} .\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$and satisfies the assumption (A1).

For the system (A.5), we give the following definition.

Definition A.5. A function $x \in P C([0, \infty) ; X)$ is said to be a mild solution of the system (A.5) with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0}$ if $x$ is given by

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}
$$

where

$$
U(t, 0)= \begin{cases}T(t) & 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}  \tag{A.6}\\ T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\prod_{j=1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right], & \tau_{k}<t \leq \tau_{k+1}\end{cases}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

Remark A.1. If $\{T(t), t>0\}$ is a compact semigroup in $X$, then $U(t, 0)$ is a compact operator. Particularly, $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ is also a compact operator.

Theorem A.3. Let assumption (A1) hold. The system (A.5) has a periodic solution if and only if the operator $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ has a fixed point $x_{0} \in X$.

Proof. Let $x(t)$ be a periodic solution of system (A.5). Suppose $x(0)=x_{0}$ be the initial condition of system (A.5), then $x\left(T_{0}\right)=x(0)=x_{0}$. Since $x\left(T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}$, then $x_{0}=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}$. That is, the operator $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ has a fixed point $x_{0} \in X$. Conversely, assume that $x_{0}$ be a fixed point of $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$. Use $x_{0}$ as the initial condition of system (A.5), then the solution is $x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}$ where $t=\bar{t}+M T_{0}$ for all $\bar{t} \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and
$M \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{0\}$. By assumption and Proposition A. 1 (4), we have $x(t)=x\left(\bar{t}+M T_{0}\right)=$ $U(\bar{t}, 0)\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{M} x_{0}=U(\bar{t}, 0) x_{0}=x(\bar{t})$. Hence $x$ is a periodic solution of system (A.5).

Theorem A.4. Let assumption (A1) hold. Furthermore, assume that $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$. Then system (A.5) either has a unique trivial solution or have finitely many linearly independent nontrivial periodic solutions in $P C([0, \infty), X)$.

Proof. Since $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right): X \rightarrow X$ is a compact linear operator, then by applying Fredholm alternative theorem (see[3]), we obtain $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ satisfy Fredholm alternative that either (a) or (b) holds: (a)The homogenous equations $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x=0$ have only the trivial solution $x=0$. That is, $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$ has only a unique fixed point $x=0$ ( i.e., by theorem A.3, this means that system (A.5) has a unique trivial solution). (b) The homogenous equations $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x=0$ have nontrivial solutions, then all of linearly independent nontrivial solutions are finite. Suppose all of nontrivial solutions $x_{0}^{1}, x_{0}^{2}, \ldots, x_{0}^{m}$ be such that $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x_{0}^{i}=0, i=1,2, \ldots, m$. So $x_{0}^{1}, x_{0}^{2}, \ldots, x_{0}^{m}$ are fixed points of $U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$. Again by Theorem A.3, this means that system (A.5) have periodic solutions, say $x^{1}, x^{2}, \ldots, x^{m}$ where $x^{i}$ are the solutions of system (A.5) corresponding to initial conditions $x^{i}(0)=x_{0}^{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, m$. Hence the number of linearly independent nontrivial periodic solutions of system (A.5) are finite.

## A. 3 Nonhomogeneous Linear Impulsive Periodic Control System

We consider the following nonhomogeneous linear impulsive periodic control system,

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{x}(t) & =A x(t)+u(t), & & t \neq \tau_{k},  \tag{A.7}\\
\Delta x(t) & =B_{k} x(t)+c_{k}, & & t=\tau_{k}, k \in \mathbb{N}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $\Delta x\left(\tau_{k}\right)=x\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-x\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$and $A$ is the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$. Suppose that system (A.7) satisfy the assumptions (A1) and (A2).

For system (A.7), we give the following definition.

Definition A.6. A function $x \in \operatorname{PC}([0, \infty), X)$ is said to be a mild solution of system (A.7) with initial condition $x(0)=x_{0}$ and the input $u \in L_{l o c}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$ if $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \tag{A.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

To be able to apply the method in Pazy [5], we also need the following lemma.
Lemma A.5. ([5]) Consider the nonhomogeneous initial value problem

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+u(t), \quad t>0  \tag{A.9}\\
x(0)=x_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

If $u \in L_{l o c}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$, then for every $x_{0} \in X$ the initial value problem (A.9) has a unique solution which satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
x(t)=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T_{0} . \tag{A.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem A.6. If assumptions (A1) and (A2) hold, then system (A.7) has a unique mild solution $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$.

Proof. For $t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$, Lemma A. 5 implies that system

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+u(t), \quad 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1}, \quad x(0)=x_{0}, \tag{A.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a unique mild solution on $I_{1}=\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$ which satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}(t)=T(t) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s, \quad t \in\left[0, \tau_{1}\right] . \tag{A.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, define

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right)=T\left(\tau_{1}\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{1}} T\left(\tau_{1}-s\right) u(s) d s \tag{A.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $x_{1}(\cdot)$ is left continuous at $\tau_{1}$.
Next, on $I_{2}=\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right]$, consider system

$$
\begin{equation*}
\dot{x}(t)=A x(t)+u(t), \quad \tau_{1}<t \leq \tau_{2}, \quad x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}^{+}\right)=\left(I+B_{1}\right) x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right)+c_{1}, \tag{A.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $x_{1} \in X$, we can use Lemma A. 5 again to get a unique mild solution on $\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right.$ ] which satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{2}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{1}\right)\left[\left(I+B_{1}\right) x_{1}\left(\tau_{1}\right)+c_{1}\right]+\int_{\tau_{1}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s . \tag{A.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, define $x_{2}\left(\tau_{2}\right)$ accordingly so that $x_{2}(\cdot)$ is left continuous at $\tau_{2}$.
It is easily seen that Lemma A. 5 can be applied to interval $\left(\tau_{1}, \tau_{2}\right.$ ] to verify that $x_{2}\left(\tau_{2}\right) \in X$. It is also easily seen that this procedure can be repeated on $I_{k}=$ $\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right], k=3,4, \ldots, \sigma\left(\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}\right)$ to get a mild solutions

$$
x_{k}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k-1}\right)\left[\left(I+B_{k-1}\right) x_{k-1}\left(\tau_{k-1}\right)+c_{k-1}\right]+\int_{\tau_{k-1}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s
$$

for $t \in\left(\tau_{k-}, \tau_{k}\right]$ and define $x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right)$ accordingly with $x_{k}(\cdot)$ left continuous at $\tau_{k}$ and $x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right) \in X, k=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$.

Thus we obtain $x \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is a unique mild solution of system (A.7) and given by.

$$
x(t)= \begin{cases}x_{1}(t), & 0 \leq t \leq \tau_{1} \\ x_{k}(t), & \tau_{k-1}<t \leq \tau_{k}, k=2,3, \ldots, \sigma\end{cases}
$$

Next, by mathematical induction to show that (A.8) is satisfied on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. First,
(A.8) is satisfied on $\left[0, \tau_{1}\right]$. If (A.8) is satisfied on $\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right]$, then for $t \in\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
x(t)= & x_{k+1}(t)=T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left[\left(I+B_{k}\right) x_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right)+c_{k}\right]+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s \\
= & T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right) x\left(\tau_{k}\right)+T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) c_{k}+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s \\
= & T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right)\left(I+B_{k}\right)\left[U\left(\tau_{k}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{k}} U\left(\tau_{k}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{i}<\tau_{k}} U\left(\tau_{k}, \tau_{i}\right) c_{i}\right] \\
& +T\left(t-\tau_{k}\right) c_{k}+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} T(t-s) u(s) d s
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{\tau_{k}} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\int_{\tau_{k}}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{i}<\tau_{k}} U\left(t, \tau_{i}\right) c_{i}+U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{i}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{i}\right) c_{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus (A.8) is also true on ( $\left.\tau_{k}, \tau_{k+1}\right]$. Therefore (A.8) is true on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.
If $x(t)$ is $T_{0}$-periodic solution of system (A.7), then we have $x\left(T_{0}\right)=x(0)$; namely,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x(0)=\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} . \tag{A.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We consider into 2 cases.

Case 1 : $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}$ exists
Theorem A.7. Let assumptions (A1) and (A2) hold. Assume that $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}$ exists and system (A.5) has no nontrivial periodic solution, then system (A.7) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic solution

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{T_{0}}(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} . \tag{A.17}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. Suppose that $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}$ exists and system (A.5) has only trivial solution. Then (A.16) gives

$$
x(0)=\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right):=x_{0} .
$$

Substitute $x(0)=x_{0}$ into equation (A.8), we get

$$
\begin{align*}
x(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} . \tag{A.18}
\end{align*}
$$

which is a mild solution of system (A.7).
Next, we want to show that a mild solution is unique and is $T_{0}$-periodic. Suppose that $y(t)=x\left(t+T_{0}\right)$ is a mild solution of system (A.7).

By Proposition A.1(3), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
y(t)= & x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=U\left(t+T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t+T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t+T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U\left(t+T_{0}, T_{0}\right) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
& +\int_{T_{0}}^{t+T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{T_{0} \leq \tau_{k}<t+T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, T_{0}\right) U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t+T_{0}, T_{0}\right) U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0) U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+U(t, 0) \int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+U(t, 0) \sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0)\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right] \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0) x\left(T_{0}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} \\
= & U(t, 0) y(0)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} .
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies that $y(t)$ is also a solution. By Corollary A. 5 implies that $y(t)=$ $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$. So $x(t)$ is a $T_{0}$-periodic solution of system (A.7), which is exactly (A.17). This completes the proof.

Case 2: $\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}$ does not exists
In this case, system (A.5) has nontrivial $T_{0}$-periodic solutions. Let us construct
the following adjoint equation of system (A.5),

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
\dot{y}(t) & =-A^{*} y, \quad t \neq \tau_{k},  \tag{A.19}\\
-\Delta y(t) & =B_{k}^{*} y(t), \quad t=\tau_{k}, \quad k=1,2, \ldots, \sigma
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $A^{*}$ is the adjoint operator of $A, 0<\tau_{1}<\tau_{2}<\ldots<\tau_{\sigma-1}<\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}$ and $\Delta y\left(\tau_{k}\right)=y\left(\tau_{k}^{+}\right)-y\left(\tau_{k}^{-}\right)$. Suppose that system (A.19) satisfies the following assumption (A4).
(A4.1) $A^{*}$ is the infinitesimal generator of the adjoint semigroup $\left\{T^{*}(t), t \geq 0\right\}$ in $X^{*} ;$
(A4.2) $B_{k}^{*} \in \mathcal{L}\left(X^{*}\right)$ such that $B_{k+\sigma}^{*}=B_{k}^{*}$ for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

Definition A.7. A function $y \in P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is said to be a periodic solution of system (A.19) with initial condition $y\left(T_{0}\right)=y(0)$ if $y$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
y(t)=U^{*}\left(T_{0}, t\right) y(0), \quad 0 \leq t \leq T_{0} \tag{A.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
U^{*}\left(T_{0}, t\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{c}
\tau_{\sigma-1}<t \leq \tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}  \tag{A.21}\\
T^{*}\left(T_{0}-t\right), \\
\left(\tau_{i}-t\right)\left(I+B_{i}^{*}\right)\left[\prod_{j=i+1}^{k}\left(I+B_{j}\right) T\left(\tau_{j}-\tau_{j-1}\right)\right]^{*} T^{*}\left(T_{0}-\tau_{k}\right)(. \\
0 \leq \tau_{i-1}<t \leq \tau_{i} \leq \tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

for all $\quad i=1,2, \ldots, \sigma-1$.
Theorem A.8. Let assumptions (A1) and (A2) hold. Furthermore, assume that $X$ is a Hilbert space and $u \in L_{l o c}^{1}([0, \infty), X)$. If system (A.5) have $m$ linearly independent periodic solutions $x^{1}, x^{2}, \ldots, x^{m}$ with $1 \leq m \leq n$ where $x^{i}$ are periodic solutions of system (A.5) corresponding to initial conditions $x^{i}(0)=x_{0}^{i}$ for all $i=1,2, \ldots, m$, then
(i) the adjoint system (A.19) also have $m$ linearly independent periodic solutions $y^{1}, y^{2}, \ldots, y^{m} ;$
(ii) system (A.7) has a $T_{0}$-periodic solution if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle y, z\rangle=0, \tag{A.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\langle y, z\rangle$ the pairing of an element $y \in X^{*}$ with an element $z \in X$ such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
{\left[I-U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] y=0}  \tag{A.23}\\
\text { and } z:=\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}, \text { or if and only if } \\
\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\langle y(s), u(s)\rangle d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\langle y\left(\tau_{k}\right), c_{k}\right\rangle=0 . \tag{A.24}
\end{gather*}
$$

Furthermore, let $x_{a}(t)$ be a particular $T_{0}$-periodic solution of system (A.7), then each $T_{0}$-periodic solution of system (A.7) has the form

$$
x(t)=x_{a}(t)+\sum_{i=1}^{m} \alpha_{i} x^{i}(t),
$$

where $\alpha_{i}, i=1,2, \ldots, m$ are constants.

Proof. (i) Suppose system (A.5) have $m$ linearly independent periodic solutions $x^{1}, x^{2}, \ldots, x^{m}$ with $1 \leq m \leq n$ where $x^{i}$ are periodic solutions of system (A.5) corresponding to initial conditions $x^{i}(0)=x_{0}^{i}$, for all $i=1,2, \ldots, m$. By Theorem A.3, this means that the equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x_{0}^{i}=0 \tag{A.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

have fixed points $x_{0}^{1}, x_{0}^{2}, \ldots, x_{0}^{m}$. Then from Theorem 8.6-3 [3], we know that the following adjoint equations of (A.25)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] y_{0}^{i}=0, \quad \text { where } \quad y_{0}^{i}=y^{i}(0) \tag{A.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

also have $m$ linearly independent solutions $y_{0}^{1}, y_{0}^{2}, \ldots, y_{0}^{m}$. So $y_{0}^{1}, y_{0}^{2}, \ldots, y_{0}^{m}$ are fixed points of $U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)$. Again by Theorem A.3, this means that system (A.19)
have periodic solutions, say $y^{1}, y^{2}, \ldots, y^{m}$ where $y^{i}$ are periodic solutions of system (A.19) corresponding to initial conditions $y^{i}(0)=y_{0}^{i}$, for all $i=1,2, \ldots, m$. (ii) System (A.7) has a $T_{0}$-periodic solution $x(t)$ if and only if the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x(0)=\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}:=z \tag{A.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a solution $x(0)$. It follows from Theorem 8.5-1 [3], that the above condition is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle y, z\rangle=0, \tag{A.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $y \in X^{*}$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] y=0 \tag{A.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

From equation (A.28), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\langle y, z\rangle=0 & \Leftrightarrow\left\langle y, \int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right\rangle=0 \\
& \Leftrightarrow \int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\langle y, U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s)\right\rangle d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\langle y, U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right\rangle=0 \\
& \Leftrightarrow \int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\langle U^{*}\left(T_{0}, s\right) y, u(s)\right\rangle d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\langle U^{*}\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) y, c_{k}\right\rangle=0 \\
& \Leftrightarrow \int_{0}^{T_{0}}\langle y(s), u(s)\rangle d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\langle y\left(\tau_{k}\right), c_{k}\right\rangle=0,
\end{aligned}
$$

from which we immediately have (A.24). This completes the proof.

The following theorem guarantee the existence of periodic solution. The proof is based on boundedness property.

Theorem A.9. If system (A.7) has a bounded solution, then it has at least one $T_{0}$-periodic solution.

Proof. Assume that $x(t)$ is a bounded solution of system (A.7). Then for any $t \geq 0$, we have

$$
x(t)=U(t, 0) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k},
$$

where $x(0)=x_{0}$ and

$$
x\left(T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k} .
$$

Define $z:=\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}$, then

$$
x\left(T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+z .
$$

We know that the function $x\left(t+T_{0}\right)$ is also a solution of system (A.7) for $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and its value at $t=0$ is $x\left(T_{0}\right)$. So

$$
x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=U(t, 0) x\left(T_{0}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}
$$

and

$$
x\left(2 T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x\left(T_{0}\right)+z=U^{2}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\left[U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)+I\right] z .
$$

Proceeding by this way, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
x\left(m T_{0}\right)=U^{m}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+\sum_{i=0}^{m-1} U^{i}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) z \quad \text { for all } m \in \mathbb{N} . \tag{A.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

By contradiction, we assume that (A.7) has no $T_{0}$-periodic solution. This means that the periodicity condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
x\left(T_{0}\right)=U\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}+z=x_{0} \tag{A.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

has no solution, i.e., the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] x_{0}=z \tag{A.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

has no solution. Then from Theorem 8.5-1 [3], we know that there is $y \in X^{*}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[I-U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right] y=0 \quad \text { and } \quad\langle y, z\rangle \neq 0 . \tag{A.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

The first condition means that $U^{*}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) y=y$, hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
U^{*^{m}}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) y=y, \quad \text { for all } m \in \mathbb{N} . \tag{A.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assume that $\langle y, z\rangle=\gamma \neq 0$. Then from equation (A.30), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\langle y, x\left(m T_{0}\right)\right\rangle & =\left\langle y, U^{m}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) x_{0}\right\rangle+\sum_{i=0}^{m-1}\left\langle y, U^{i}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) z\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle U^{*^{m}}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) y, x_{0}\right\rangle+\sum_{i=0}^{m-1}\left\langle U^{*^{i}}\left(T_{0}, 0\right) y, z\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle y, x_{0}\right\rangle+\sum_{i=0}^{m-1}\langle y, z\rangle \\
& =\left\langle y, x_{0}\right\rangle+m \gamma .
\end{aligned}
$$

Letting $m \rightarrow \infty$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty}\left\langle y, x\left(m T_{0}\right)\right\rangle=\infty . \tag{A.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $x(t)$ is bounded solution and $y \in X^{*}$, then

$$
\left|\left\langle y, x\left(m T_{0}\right)\right\rangle\right| \leq\|y\|_{X^{*}}\left\|x\left(m T_{0}\right)\right\|_{X} \leq M\|y\|_{X^{*}}<\infty .
$$

It's contradiction to (A.35). Consequently, the assumption is not true and system (A.7) has at least one $T_{0}$-periodic solution.

## Corollary A. 10.

(i) Assume that system (A.7) has no $T_{0}$-periodic solution, then all of its solutions are unbounded for $t \geq 0$.
(ii) Assume that system (A.7) has a unique bounded solution for $t \geq 0$, then this solution is $T_{0}$-periodic.

## A. 4 Impulsive Periodic Control System with Parameter Perturbations

In this section, we will find sufficient conditions for the existence of $T_{0}$ periodic solutions of system (A.1), by using the fixed point theorems of an operator acting in a Banach space (see [7]). We assume that system (A.5) has only trivial solution. Let $\xi=0$, then system (A.1) has the same form as system (A.7) because it follows from (A.2) that $p(t, x, 0)=0$ and $q_{k}(x, 0)=0$. It follows from Theorem A.7, that system (A.1) has a $T_{0}$-periodic solution ;

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{T_{0}}(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) u(s) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) u(s) d s  \tag{А.36}\\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) c_{k}
\end{align*}
$$

where $U(t, s)$ is defined in (A.3). Then we have the following theorem to show that for small $\xi$ system (A.1) has a $T_{0}$-periodic solution which is closed to $x_{T_{0}}(t)$. Theorem A.11. Under assumption (A1)-(A3). Let $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$. Assume that
(i) system (A.5) has only trivial solution;
(ii) the following inequality is valid

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{0}=\sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}<\rho \tag{A.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\rho$ be any positive real number ;
(iii) $p(t, x, \xi)$ and $q_{k}(x, \xi)$ satisfy Lipschitz conditions, i.e. for any $(t, x, \xi)$, $(t, y, \xi) \in[0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}_{\rho} \times\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, there exists a constant $N(\xi)>0$ such that

$$
\|p(t, x, \xi)-p(t, y, \xi)\|_{x} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{x}
$$

and

$$
\left\|q_{k}(x, \xi)-q_{k}(y, \xi)\right\|_{X} \leq N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{X} .
$$

Then for any constant $\rho>\rho_{0}>0$, there exists a sufficiently small $\xi_{0}>0$ such that for every fixed $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ system (A.1) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}<\rho-\rho_{0} \tag{A.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{\xi \rightarrow 0} x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)=x_{T_{0}}(t) \tag{A.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

uniformly on $t$.

Proof. Let $P C_{T_{0}}([0, \infty), X):=\left\{x \in P C([0, \infty), X) \mid x\left(t+T_{0}\right)=x(t), \forall t \geq 0\right\}$. Moreover, $P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is a Banach space with the norm

$$
\|x\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}=\sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\|x(t)\|_{X}
$$

Let us define

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{B} & :=\mathcal{B}\left(x_{T_{0}}, \rho_{1}\right)=\left\{x \in P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right) \mid\left\|x-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho_{1}:=\rho-\rho_{0}\right\} \\
L_{1} & =\sup _{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T_{0}}\|U(t, s)\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}  \tag{A.40}\\
L_{2} & =\left\|\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}
\end{align*}
$$

and an operator $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega(x)(t):= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)[u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right)+\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)[u(s)  \tag{A.41}\\
& +p(s, x(s), \xi)] d s+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] .
\end{align*}
$$

From (A.37) and (A.40), we know that if $x \in \mathcal{B}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|x\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq\left\|x-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+\left\|x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho_{1}+\rho_{0}=\rho . \tag{A.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

For any $x, y \in \mathcal{B}$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\|\Omega(x)-\Omega(y)\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}= & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \| U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)[p(s, x(s), \xi)-p(s, y(s), \xi)] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)[p(s, x(s), \xi)-p(s, y(s), \xi)] d s  \tag{А.43}\\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)-q_{k}\left(y\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] \|_{X} \\
\leq & L N(\xi)\|x-y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}},
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
L=L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+ & L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma \text { and } \\
\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}= & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \| U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right)  \tag{A.44}\\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right) \|_{X} \\
\leq & L \chi(\xi) .
\end{align*}
$$

Let us choose $\xi_{0}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta=L \sup _{|\xi| \leq \xi_{0}} N(\xi)<1, \quad L \sup _{|\xi| \leq \xi_{0}} \chi(\xi) \leq \rho_{1}(1-\eta) . \tag{A.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assume that $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, then it follows from (A.43), (A.44) and (A.45) that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \|\Omega(x)-\Omega(y)\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \eta\|x-y\|_{P C_{T_{0}}},  \tag{A.46}\\
& \left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho_{1}(1-\eta) .
\end{align*}
$$

This means that $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}$ is a contraction mapping, so $\Omega$ has a unique fixed point $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi} \in \mathcal{B}$ satisfy

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)= & U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\left[u(s)+p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right]\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s)\left[u(s), p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(s), \xi\right)\right] d s  \tag{A.47}\\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right)\left[c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right] .
\end{align*}
$$

It is clear that $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ is a $T_{0}$-periodic solution of system (A.1) and satisfies estimate (A.38). Since we know that $\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\right)(t)=x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ for all $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.

Then

$$
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}=\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}\right)(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X} \leq L \chi(\xi)
$$

Letting $\xi \rightarrow 0$, we obtain (A.39). This completes the proof.

The following definition and lemma will be used in the proof of Theorem A. 13.

Definition A.8. A set $\mathcal{S} \subset P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is quasiequicontinuous in $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ if for any $\delta>0$ there exists $\varepsilon>0$ such that if $x \in \mathcal{S}, t_{1}, t_{2} \in\left(\tau_{k-1}, \tau_{k}\right] \cap\left[0, T_{0}\right], k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\left|t_{1}-t_{2}\right|<\varepsilon$, then $\left\|x\left(t_{1}\right)-x\left(t_{2}\right)\right\|_{x}<\delta$.

Lemma A.12. A set $\mathcal{S} \subset P C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is relatively compact if and only if
(i) $\mathcal{S}$ is bounded for each $x \in \mathcal{S}$,
(ii) $\mathcal{S}$ is quasiequicontinuous in $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.

Theorem A.13. Under assumption (A1)-(A3). Let $A$ be the infinitesimal generator of a compact semigroup $\{T(t), t>0\}$ in $X$. Assume that
(ii) system (A.5) has only trivial solution;
(i) the following inequality is valid

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{0}=\sup _{t \in[0, \infty]}\left\|x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X}<\rho . \tag{A.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then for any constant $\rho>\rho_{0}>0$, there exists a sufficiently small $\xi_{0}>0$ such that for every fixed $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ system (A.1) has a unique $T_{0}$-periodic mild solution $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)-x_{T_{0}}(t)\right\|_{X} \leq \rho-\rho_{0} \tag{A.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. As in the proof of Theorem A.11, we determine successively the number $\rho_{1}=\rho-\rho_{0}$, the Banach space $P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$, the set $\mathcal{B}:=\mathcal{B}\left(x_{T_{0}} ; \rho_{1}\right)$ and the operator $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow P C_{T_{0}}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], X\right)$ is defined in (A.41). Obviously, $\mathcal{B}$ is a nonempty bounded closed and convex set. It follows from equation (A.42) that if $x \in \mathcal{B}$, then $\|x\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho$. For any $x \in \mathcal{B}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}= & \sup _{t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \| U(t, 0)\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, s\right) p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right) d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right) q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} U(t, s) p\left(s, x_{T_{0}}(s), \xi\right) d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}} U\left(t, \tau_{k}\right) q_{k}\left(x_{T_{0}}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right) \|_{X} \\
\leq & \left(L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma\right) \chi(\xi) .
\end{aligned}
$$

So

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq L \chi(\xi) . \tag{A.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $L=L_{1}^{2} L_{2} T_{0}+L_{1}^{2} L_{2} \sigma+L_{1} T_{0}+L_{1} \sigma$.
Let us choose $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
L \sup _{\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]} \chi(\xi) \leq \rho_{1} . \tag{A.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then for $\xi \in\left[0, \xi_{0}\right]$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq L \chi(\xi) \leq \rho_{1}, \tag{A.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

From which we know that $\Omega(x) \in \mathcal{B}$ and therefore $\Omega: \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}$.
It follows from (A.36), (A.48) and (A.52) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq\left\|\Omega\left(x_{T_{0}}\right)-x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}}+\left\|x_{T_{0}}\right\|_{P C_{T_{0}}} \leq \rho_{1}+\rho_{0}=\rho . \tag{A.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

That is, the set $\mathcal{B}$ is uniformly bounded.
Let $x \in \mathcal{B}_{\rho}$ and $t_{1}, t_{2} \in\left(\tau_{i-1}, \tau_{i}\right] \cap\left[0, T_{0}\right], i=1,2, \ldots, \sigma$, where $\tau_{0}=0$ and $\tau_{\sigma}=T_{0}$.
For $0<\varepsilon<t_{1}<t_{2} \leq T_{0}$, then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|(\Omega x)\left(t_{1}\right)-(\Omega x)\left(t_{2}\right)\right\|_{X} \leq & \left\|U\left(t_{1}, 0\right)-U\left(t_{2}, 0\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|\left[I-U\left(T_{0}, 0\right)\right]^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)} \\
& \left(\int_{0}^{T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<T_{0}}\left\|U\left(T_{0}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X}\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t_{1}-\epsilon}\left\|U\left(t_{1}, s\right)-U\left(t_{2}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s \\
& +\int_{t_{1}-\epsilon}^{t_{1}}\left\|U\left(t_{1}, s\right)-U\left(t_{2}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s \\
& +\int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}}\left\|U\left(t_{2}, s\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\|u(s)+p(s, x(s), \xi)\|_{X} d s \\
& +\sum_{0 \leq \tau_{k}<t}\left\|U\left(t_{1}, \tau_{k}\right)-U\left(t_{2}, \tau_{k}\right)\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(X)}\left\|c_{k}+q_{k}\left(x\left(\tau_{k}\right), \xi\right)\right\|_{X} .
\end{aligned}
$$

from which we know that for any $\delta>0$, there exists $\varepsilon>0$ such that if $t_{1}-t_{2}<\varepsilon$, then $\left\|\Omega(x)\left(t_{1}\right)-\Omega(x)\left(t_{2}\right)\right\|_{X}<\delta$. Thus $\mathcal{B}$ is quasiequicontinuous and by Lemma A.12, we know that the following set is relatively compact in $\mathcal{B}$;

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{S}=\{y \in \mathcal{B} \mid y=\Omega(x), x \in \mathcal{B}\} \tag{A.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

Applying Schuader's fixed point theorem, it follows that the operator $\Omega$ has a fixed point $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi} \in \mathcal{B}$ and satisfies equation (A.47). It is clear that $x_{T_{0}}^{\xi}(t)$ is a $T_{0}$-periodic solution of system (A.1).

## A. 5 References

Ahmed, N. U. (1991). Semigroup theory with applications to systems and control, Longman Scientific \& Technical, New York.

Bainov, D. D. and Simeonov, P. S. (1993). Impulsive Differential Equations : Periodic Solutions and Applications, Longman Group UK Limited.

Kreyszig, E. (1978). Introductory functional analysis with applications, John Wiley \& Sons, Inc.

Lakshmikantham, V., Bainov D. D. and Simenov, P. S. (1989) Theory of Impulsive Differential Equations, Series in modern applied mathematics. Singapore and Teaneck, NJ : World Scientific.

Pazy, A. (1983). Semigroups of linear operators and applications to partial differential equations, Springer, New York.

Yang, T. (2001). Impulsive Control Theory, Springer, New York.
Zeider, E. (1990). Nonlinear Functional Analysis and Its Applications II, Springer, New York.
(Received 30 December 2005)

## CURRICULUM VITAE

NAME: Sujitra Hinpang. GENDER: Female. NATIONALITY: Thai.
DATE OF BIRTH: September 20, 1977.
EDUCATIONAL BACKGROUND:

- B.Sc. in Mathematics, Chiangmai University, Chiangmai, Thailand, 1998.
- M.Sc. in Mathematics, Chiangmai University, Chiangmai, Thailand, 2000.

WORK EXPERIENCE:

- Lecturer in Mathematics at Department of Mathematics and Statistics, Faculty of Science, Maejo University, Chaingmai, Thailand. During 2001-2003.

PUBLICATIONS:

- Hinpang, S., Xiang, X. and Sattayatham, P. (2006). Impulsive Periodic Control Systems with Parameter Perturbation, Thai journal of Mathematics, Vol. 4, No. 1.

PRESENTATIONS:

- Relaxation for a Class of Nonlinear Evolution Systems and Optimal Control, Fourth International Conference on Intelligent Technologies 2003, Dec. 17-19, 2003, Chiang Mai, Thailand.
- Periodic solutions of Linear Impulsive Control Systems on Infinite Dimensional, International Workshop: Modeling and Simulation in Applied Mathematics, Jan. 20-21, 2006, School of Mathematics, Suranaree University of Technology, Nakhon Rathchasima, Thailand.


## SCHOLARSHIPS:

- The Ministry of University Affairs of Thailand (MUA), 2005-2006.


[^0]:    *S. Hinpang, X. Xiang and P. Sattayatham (2006), Thai Journal of Mathematics, Volume 4 Number 1: pp107-125

